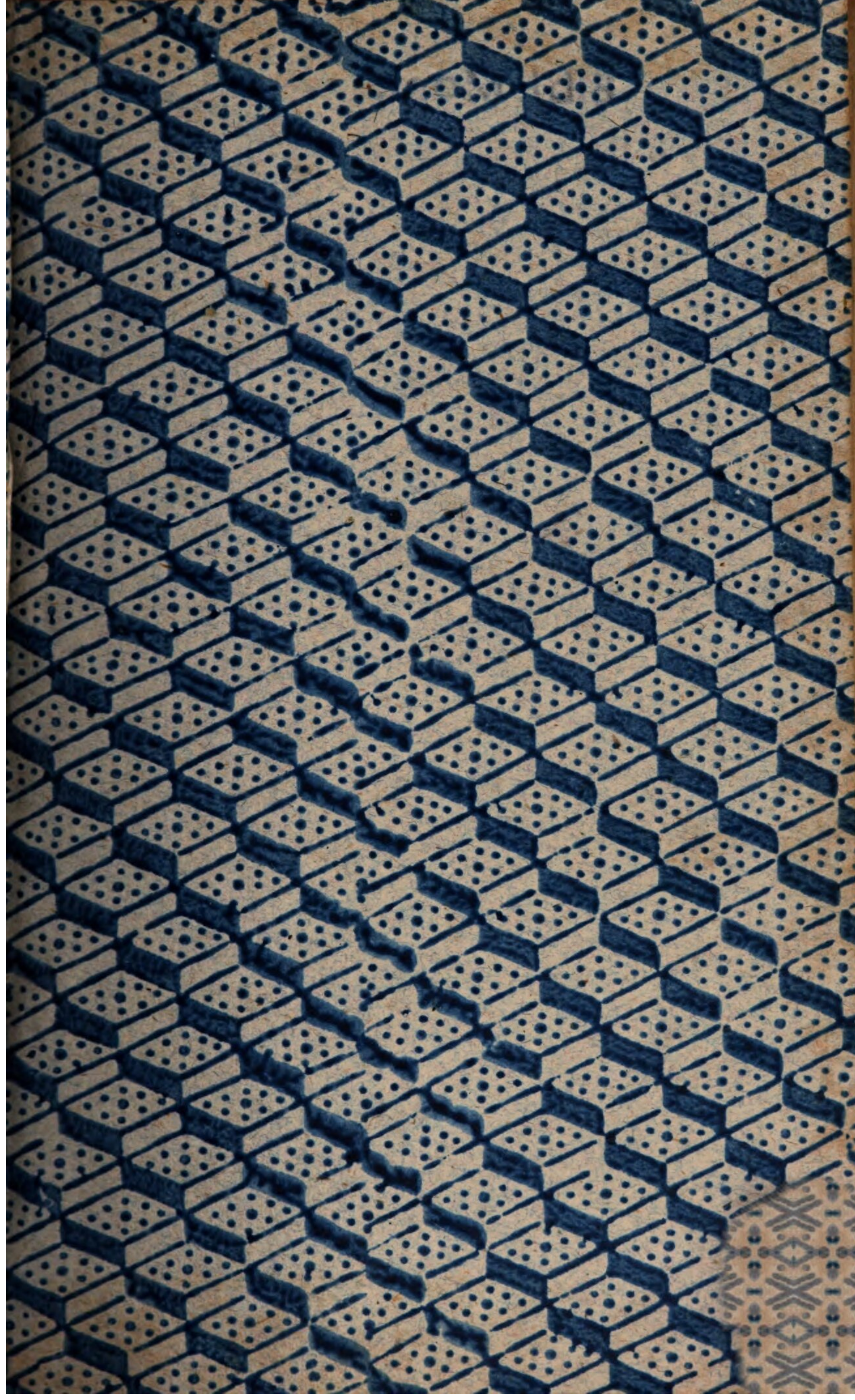






992

Bibl. Mont.

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION

500 FIFTH AVENUE NEW YORK 10017

LIBRARY OF THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION

500 FIFTH AVENUE NEW YORK 10017

LIBRARY OF THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION

LIBRARY OF THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION

LIBRARY OF THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION

500 FIFTH AVENUE NEW YORK 10017

L E T T E R S
O N T H E
S T U D Y A N D U S E
O F
H I S T O R Y.

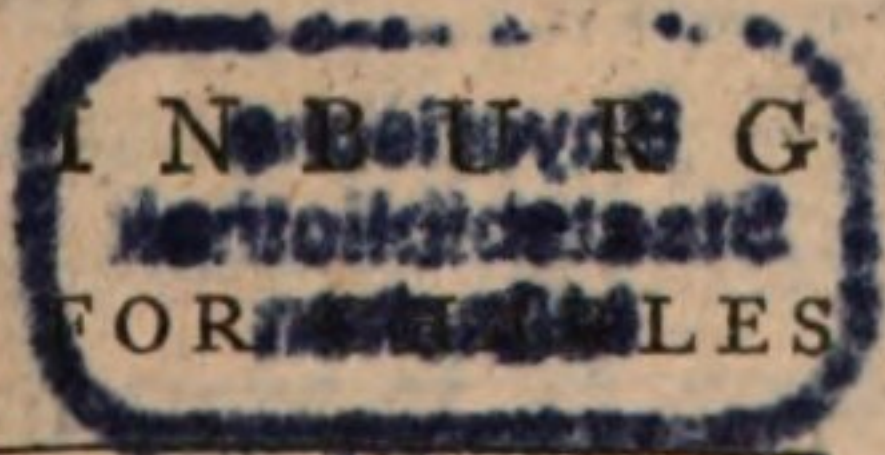
B Y

The late RIGHT HONOURABLE

H E N R Y S T. J O H N,

L O R D V I S C O U N T B O L I N G B R O K E.

A NEW EDITION, Corrected.

E D I N B U R G H:
PRINTED FOR  J. LEES ELLIOT.

M. DCC. LXXVII.

LETTERS

ON THE

STUDY AND USE

OF

HISTORY.

BY

The late Right Honourable

Henry St. John

Lord Viscount Bolingbroke.

A NEW EDITION, Corrected.



M. DCC. LXXII.

T H E
C O N T E N T S.

L E T T E R I.

O*F the study of history.*

Page 17

L E T T E R II.

Concerning the true use and advantages of it.

P. 23

L E T T E R III.

1. *An objection against the utility of history removed.* 2. *The false and true aims of those who study it.* 3. *Of the history of the first ages; with reflections on the state of ancient history, profane and sacred.*

P. 47

L E T T E R IV.

1. *That there is in history sufficient authenticity to render it useful, notwithstanding all objections to the contrary.* 2. *Of the method and due restrictions to be observed in the study of it.*

p. 89

L E T T E R V.

1. *The great use of history, properly so called, as distinguished from the writings of mere annalists and antiquaries.* 2. *Greek and Roman historians.* 3. *Some idea of a complete history.* 4. *Further cautions to be observed in this study, and the regulations of it according to the different*

C O N T E N T S.

ferent professions and situations of men: above all, the use to be made of it (1) by divines, and (2) by those who are called to the service of their country. p. 107

L E T T E R VI.

From what period modern history is peculiarly useful to the service of our country, viz. From the end of the fifteenth century to the present. The division of this into three particular periods; in order to a sketch of the history and state of Europe from that time. p. 138

L E T T E R VII.

A sketch of the state and history of Europe from the Pyrenean treaty in one thousand six hundred and fifty-nine, to the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight. p. 166

L E T T E R VIII.

The same subject continued from the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight. p. 209

L E T T E R I.

A plan for a general history of Europe. p. 319

L E T T E R II.

Of the true use of retirement and study. p. 326

Reflections upon Exile. p. 349

L E T T E R S
ON THE
S T U D Y and U S E
O F
H I S T O R Y.

L E T T E R I.

Of the S T U D Y of H I S T O R Y.

MY LORD,

Chantelou in Touraine, Nov. 6, 1735.

I HAVE considered formerly, with a good deal of attention, the subject on which you command me to communicate my thoughts to you; and I practised in those days, as much as business and pleasure allowed me time to do, the rules that seemed to me necessary to be observed in the study of history. They were very different from those which writers on the same subject have recommended, and which are commonly practised. But I confess to your Lordship, that this neither gave me then, nor has given me since, any distrust of them. I do not affect singularity. On the contrary, I think that a due

B defe-

deference is to be paid to received opinions, and that a due compliance with received customs is to be held; though both the one and the other should be, what they often are, absurd or ridiculous. But this fervitude is outward only, and abridges in no sort the liberty of private judgment. The obligations of submitting to it likewise, even outwardly, extend no further than to those opinions and customs which cannot be opposed, or from which we cannot deviate without doing hurt or giving offence to society. In all these cases, our speculations ought to be free: in all other cases, our practice may be so. Without any regard, therefore, to the opinion and practice even of the learned world, I am very willing to tell you mine. But, as it is hard to recover a thread of thought long ago laid aside, and impossible to prove some things, and explain others, without the assistance of many books which I have not here; your Lordship must be content with such an imperfect sketch as I am able to send you at present in this letter.

THE motives that carry men to the study of history are different. Some intend, if such as they may be said to study, nothing more than amusement; and read the life of *Aristides* or *Phocion*, of *Epaminondas* or *Scipio*, *Alexander* or *Cæsar*, just as they play a game at cards, or as they would read the story of the Seven Champions.

Others there are, whose motive to this study is nothing better; and who have the further disadvantage of becoming a nuisance very often to society,

society, in proportion to the progress they make. The former do not improve their reading to any good purpose: the latter pervert it to a very bad one, and grow in impertinence as they increase in learning. I think I have known most of the first kind in England, and most of the last in France. The persons I mean are those who read to talk, to shine in conversation, and to impose in company: who, having few ideas to vend of their own growth, store their minds with crude unruminated facts and sentences; and hope to supply, by bare memory, the want of imagination and judgment.

But these are in the two lowest forms. The next I shall mention are in one a little higher; in the form of those who grow neither wiser nor better by study themselves, but who enable others to study with greater ease, and to purposes more useful; who make fair copies of foul manuscripts, give the signification of hard words, and take a great deal of other grammatical pains. The obligation to these men would be great indeed, if they were in general able to do any thing better, and submitted to this drudgery for the sake of the public; as some of them, it must be owned with gratitude, have done, but not later, I think, than about the time of the resurrection of letters. When works of importance are pressing, generals themselves may take up the pick-axe and the spade; but in the ordinary course of things, when that pressing necessity is over, such tools are left in the hands destined to use them, the hands of common soldiers and peasants. I

approve, therefore, very much the devotion of a studious man at Christ-church, who was overheard in his oratory entering into a detail with God, as devout persons are apt to do, and, amongst other particular thanksgivings, acknowledging the divine goodness in furnishing the world with makers of dictionaries! These men court fame, as well as their betters, by such means as God has given them to acquire it: and *Littleton* exerted all the genius he had, when he made a dictionary, though *Stephens* did not. They deserve encouragement, however, whilst they continue to compile, and neither affect wit, nor presume to reason.

There is a fourth class, of much less use than these, but of much greater name; men of the first rank in learning, and to whom the whole tribe of scholars bow with reverence. A man must be as indifferent as I am to common censure or approbation, to avow a thorough contempt for the whole business of these learned lives; for all the researches into antiquity, for all the systems of chronology and history, that we owe to the immense labours of a *Scaliger*, a *Bochart*, a *Petavius*, an *Usher*, and even a *Marsham*. The same materials are common to them all; but these materials are few, and there is a moral impossibility that they should ever have more. They have combined these into every form that can be given to them: they have supposed, they have guessed, they have joined disjointed passages of different authors, and broken traditions of uncertain originals, of various people,

ple, and of centuries remote from one another as well as from ours. In short, that they might leave no liberty untaken, even a wild fantastical similitude of sounds has served to prop up a system. As the materials they have are few; so are the very best, and such as pass for authentic, extremely precarious; as some of these learned persons themselves confess.

Julius Africanus, *Eusebius*, and *George the Monk*, opened the principal sources of all this science; but they corrupted the waters. Their point of view was to make profane history and chronology agree with sacred; though the latter chronology is very far from being established with the clearness and certainty necessary to make it a rule. For this purpose, the ancient monuments, that these writers conveyed to posterity, were digested by them according to the system they were to maintain; and none of these monuments were delivered down in their original form, and genuine purity. The Dynasties of *Manetho*, for instance, are broken to pieces by *Eusebius*, and such fragments of them as suited his design are struck into his work. We have, we know, no more of them. The Codex Alexandrinus we owe to *George the Monk*. We have no other authority for it: and one cannot see without amazement such a man as *Sir John Marsham* undervaluing this authority in one page, and building his system upon it in the next. He seems even by the lightness of his expressions, if I remember well, for it is long since I looked into his canon, not to be

much concerned what foundation his system had, so he shewed his skill in forming one, and in reducing the immense antiquity of the Egyptians within the limits of the Hebraic calculation. In short, my Lord, all these systems are so many enchanted castles; they appear to be something, they are nothing but appearances: like them too, dissolve the charm, and they vanish from the sight. To dissolve the charm, we must begin at the beginning of them: the expression may be odd, but it is significant. We must examine scrupulously and indifferently the foundations on which they lean: and when we find these either faintly probable, or grossly improbable, it would be foolish to expect any thing better in the superstructure. This science is one of those that are *a limine salutandæ*. To do thus much may be necessary, that grave authority may not impose on our ignorance: to do more, would be to assist this very authority in imposing false science upon us. I had rather take the *Darius* whom *Alexander* conquered, for the son of *Hydaspes*, and make as many anachronisms as a Jewish chronologer, than sacrifice half my life to collect all the learned lumber that fills the head of an antiquary.

L E T.

LETTER II.

Concerning the true Use and Advantages of
HISTORY.

LET me say something of history in general, before I descend into the consideration of particular parts of it, or of the various methods of study, or of the different views of those that apply themselves to it, as I had begun to do in my former letter.

The love of history seems inseparable from human nature, because it seems inseparable from self-love. The same principle, in this instance, carries us forward, and backward, to future and to past ages. We imagine that the things which affect us, must affect posterity: this sentiment runs thro' mankind, from *Cæsar* down to the parish-clerk in *Pope's Miscellany*. We are fond of preserving, as far as it is in our frail power, the memory of our own adventures, of those of our own time, and of those that preceded it. Rude heaps of stones have been raised, and ruder hymns have been composed, for this purpose, by nations who had not yet the use of arts and letters. To go no farther back, the triumphs of *Odin* were celebrated in runic songs, and the feats of our British ancestors were recorded in those of their bards. The savages of America have the same custom at this day: and long historical ballads of their huntings, and their wars, are sung at all their festivals.

There is no need of saying how this passion grows among civilized nations, in proportion to the means of gratifying it: but let us observe, that the same principle of nature directs us as strongly, and more generally as well as more early, to indulge our own curiosity, instead of preparing to gratify that of others. The child hearkens with delight to the tales of his nurse: he learns to read, and he devours with eagerness, fabulous legends and novels: in riper years, he applies himself to history, or to that which he takes for history, to authorized romance: and, even in age, the desire of knowing what has happened to other men, yields to the desire alone of relating what has happened to ourselves. Thus history, true or false, speaks to our passions always. What pity is it, my Lord, that even the best should speak to our understandings so seldom! That it does so, we have none to blame but ourselves. Nature has done her part. She has opened this study to every man who can read and think: and what she has made the most agreeable, reason can make the most useful, application of our minds. But if we consult our reason, we shall be far from following the examples of our fellow-creatures in this, as in most other cases, who are so proud of being rational. We shall neither read to soothe our indolence, nor to gratify our vanity: as little shall we content ourselves to drudge like grammarians and critics, that others may be able to study with greater ease and profit, like philosophers and statesmen: as little shall we affect

fect the slender merit of becoming great scholars, at the expence of groping all our lives in the dark mazes of antiquity. All these mistake the true drift of study, and the true use of history. Nature gave us curiosity to excite the industry of our minds; but she never intended it should be made the principal, much less the sole, object of their application. The true and proper object of this application is a constant improvement in private and in public virtue. An application to any study, that tends neither directly nor indirectly to make us better men and better citizens, is at best but a specious and ingenious sort of idleness, to use an expression of *Tillotson*; and the knowledge we acquire by it, is a creditable kind of ignorance, nothing more. This creditable kind of ignorance is, in my opinion, the whole benefit which the generality of men, even of the most learned, reap from the study of history: and yet the study of history seems to me, of all other, the most proper to train us up to private and public virtue.

Your Lordship may very well be ready by this time, and after so much bold censure on my part, to ask me, What then is the true use of history? in what respects it may serve to make us better and wiser? and what method is to be pursued in the study of it, for attaining these great ends? I will answer you by quoting what I have read somewhere or other in *Dionys. Halicarn.* I think, That history is philosophy teaching by example. We need but to cast our eyes
on

on the world, and we shall see the daily force of example; we need but to turn them inward, and we shall soon discover why example has this force. “*Pauci prudentia,*” says *Tacitus*, “*honesti ab deterioribus, utilia ab noxiis discernunt: plures aliorum eventis docentur.*” Such is the imperfection of human understanding, such the frail temper of our minds, that abstract or general propositions, though ever so true, appear obscure or doubtful to us, very often, till they are explained by examples: and that the wisest lessons in favour of virtue, go but a little way to convince the judgment, and determine the will, unless they are enforced by the same means; and we are obliged to apply to ourselves what we see happen to other men. Instructions by precept have the further disadvantage of coming on the authority of others, and frequently require a long deduction of reasoning. “*Homines amplius oculis, quam auribus, credunt: longum iter est per præcepta, breve et efficax per exempla.*” The reason of this judgment, which I quote from one of *Seneca’s* Epistles in confirmation of my own opinion, rests, I think, on this; That when examples are pointed out to us, there is a kind of appeal, with which we are flattered, made to our senses, as well as our understandings. The instruction comes then upon our own authority: we frame the precept after our own experience, and yield to fact when we resist speculation. But this is not the only advantage of instruction by example; for example appeals not to our understanding

derstanding alone, but to our passions likewise. Example asswages these, or animates them; sets passion on the side of judgment, and makes the whole man of a piece; which is more than the strongest reasoning and the clearest demonstration can do: and thus forming habits by repetition, example secures the observance of those precepts which example insinuated. Is it not *Pliny*, my Lord, who says, that the gentlest (he should have added, the most effectual) way of commanding, is by example? “*Mitius jubetur exemplo.*” The harshest orders are softened by example, and tyranny itself becomes persuasive. What pity it is that so few princes have learned this way of commanding? But again: The force of examples is not confined to those alone that pass immediately under our sight; the examples, that memory suggests, have the same effect in their degree, and an habit of recalling them will soon produce the habit of imitating them. In the same Epistle, from whence I cited a passage just now, *Seneca* says, that *Cleanthes* had never become so perfect a copy of *Zeno*, if he had not passed his life with him; that *Plato*, *Aristotle*, and the other philosophers of that school, profited more by the example than by the discourse of *Socrates*. [But here, by the way, *Seneca* mistook; for *Socrates* died two years, according to some, and four years, according to others, before the birth of *Aristotle*: and his mistake might come from the inaccuracy of those who collected for him; as *Erasmus* observes, after *Quintilian*, in his judgment

ment on *Seneca*.] But be this, which was scarce worth a parenthesis, as it will; he adds, that *Metrodorus*, *Hermachus*, and *Polyænus*, men of great note, were formed by living under the same roof with *Epicurus*, not by frequenting his school. These are instances of the force of immediate example. But your Lordship knows, that the citizens of Rome placed the images of their ancestors in the vestibules of their houses; so that, whenever they went in or out, these venerable bustoes met their eyes, and recalled the glorious actions of the dead, to fire the living, to excite them to imitate, and even to emulate, their great forefathers. The success answered the design. The virtue of one generation was transfused, by the magic of example, into several: and a spirit of heroism was maintained through many ages of that commonwealth. Now these are so many instances of the force of remote example; and from all these instances we may conclude, that examples of both kinds are necessary.

The school of example, my Lord, is the world: and the masters of this school are history and experience. I am far from contending that the former is preferable to the latter. I think, upon the whole, otherwise: but this I say, that the former is absolutely necessary to prepare us for the latter, and to accompany us whilst we are under the discipline of the latter, that is, through the whole course of our lives. No doubt, some few men may be quoted, to whom nature gave, what art and industry can give to no man. But
such

such examples will prove nothing against me, because I admit that the study of history, without experience, is sufficient; but assert, that experience itself is so, without genius. Genius is preferable to the other two; but I would wish to find the three together: for how great soever a genius may be, and how much soever he may acquire new light and heat as he proceeds in his rapid course, certain it is that he will never shine with the full lustre, nor shed the full influence he is capable of, unless to his own experience he adds the experience of other men and other ages. Genius, without the improvement, at least, of experience, is what comets once were thought to be, a blazing meteor, irregular in his course, and dangerous in his approach; of no use to any system, and able to destroy any. Mere sons of earth, if they have experience without any knowledge of the history of the world, are but half scholars in the science of mankind: And if they are conversant in history without experience, they are worse than ignorant; they are pedants, always incapable, sometimes meddling and presuming. The man who has all three, is an honour to his country, and a public blessing: and such, I trust, your lordship will be in this century, as your great-grandfather* was in the last.

I have insisted a little the longer on this head, and have made these distinctions the rather, because, though I attribute a great deal more, than

* Earl of CLARENDON.

than many will be ready to allow, to the study of history; yet I would not willingly even seem to fall into the ridicule of ascribing to it such extravagant effects, as several have done, from *Tully* down to *Casaubon*, *La Mothe le Vayer*, and other modern pedants. When *Tully* informs us, in the second book of his *Tusculan Disputations*, that the first *Scipio Africanus* had always in his hands the works of *Xenophon*, he advances nothing but what is probable and reasonable. To say nothing of the retreat of the ten thousand, nor of other parts of *Xenophon's* writings; the images of virtue, represented in that admirable picture the *Cyropædia*, were proper to entertain a soul that was fraught with virtue, and *Cyrus* was worthy to be imitated by *Scipio*. So *Selim* emulated *Cæsar*, whose *Commentaries* were translated for his use against the customs of the *Turks*: so *Cæsar* emulated *Alexander*; and *Alexander*, *Achilles*. There is nothing ridiculous here, except the use that is made of this passage by those who quote it. But what the same *Tully* says, in the fourth book of his *Academical Disputations*, concerning *Lucullus*, seems to me very extraordinary. “In *Asiam* factus imperator venit; cum esset *Roma*, profectus rei militaris rudis;” [one would be ready to ascribe so sudden a change, and so vast an improvement, to nothing less than knowledge infused by inspiration, if we were not assured in the same place, that they were effected by very natural means, by such as it is in every man's power to employ] “partim per-
con-

“contando a peritis, partim in rebus gestis legendis.” *Lucullus*, according to this account, verified the reproach on the Roman nobility, which *Sallust* puts into the mouth of *Marius*. But as I discover the passion of *Marius*, and his prejudices to the Patricians, in one case; so I discover, methinks, the cunning of *Tully*, and his partiality to himself, in the other. *Lucullus*, after he had been chosen consul, obtained by intrigue the government of Cilicia, and so put himself into a situation of commanding the Roman army against *Mithridates*: *Tully* had the same government afterwards; and tho’ he had no *Mithridates*, nor any other enemy of consequence, opposed to him; though all his military feats consisted in surprizing and pillaging a parcel of Highlanders and wild Cilicians; yet he assumed the airs of a conqueror, and described his actions in so pompous a style, that the account becomes burlesque. He laughs, indeed, in one of his letters to *Atticus*, at his generalship: but if we turn to those he writ to *Cælius Rufus* and to *Cato* upon this occasion, or to those wherein he expresses to *Atticus* his resentment against *Cato* for not proposing in his favour the honours usually decreed to conquerors, we may see how vanity turned his head, and how impudently he insisted on obtaining a triumph. Is it any strain now to suppose, that he meant to insinuate, in the passage I have quoted about *Lucullus*, that the difference between him and the former governor of *Cilicia*, even in military merit, arose from the different
con-

conjuncture alone; and that *Lucullus* could not have done in Cilicia, at that time, more than he himself did? *Cicero* had read and questioned at least as much as *Lucullus*, and would therefore have appeared as great a captain, if he had had as great a prince as *Mithridates* to encounter. But the truth is, that *Lucullus* was made a great captain by theory, or the study of history alone, no more than *Ferdinand* of Spain, and *Alphonfus* of Naples, were cured of desperate distempers by reading *Livy* and *Quintus Curtius*; a silly tale, which *Bodin Amyot* and others have picked up and propagated. *Lucullus* had served in his youth against the *Marfi*, probably in other wars, and *Sylla* took early notice of him: he went into the East with this general, and had a great share in his confidence. He commanded in several expeditions. It was he who restored the *Colophonians* to their liberty, and who punished the revolt of the people of *Mytelene*. Thus we see that *Lucullus* was formed by experience, as well as study; and by an experience gained in those very countries, where he gathered so many laurels afterwards in fighting against the same enemy. The late Duke of *Marlborough* never read *Xenophon*, most certainly; nor the relation, perhaps, of any modern wars: but he served in his youth under Monsieur de *Turrene*, and I have heard that he was taken notice of in those early days by that great man. He afterwards commanded in an expedition to Ireland; served a campaign or two, if I mistake not, under King *William* in Flanders;

Flanders; and, besides these occasions, had none of gaining experience in war, till he came to the head of our armies in one thousand seven hundred and two, and triumphed, not over Asiatic troops, but over the veteran armies of France. The Roman had on his side genius and experience cultivated by study: the Briton had genius improved by experience, and no more. The first, therefore, is not an example of what study can do alone; but the latter is an example of what genius and experience can do without study. They can do much, to be sure, when the first is given in a superior degree. But such examples are very rare: and when they happen, it will be still true, that they would have had fewer blemishes, and would have come nearer to the perfection of private and public virtue, in all the arts of peace and achievements of war, if the views of such men had been enlarged, and their sentiments ennobled, by acquiring that cast of thought, and that temper of mind, which will grow up, and become habitual in every man who applies himself early to the study of history, as to the study of philosophy, with the intention of being wiser and better, without the affectation of being more learned.

The temper of the mind is formed, and a certain turn given to our ways of thinking; in a word, the seeds of that moral character which cannot wholly alter the natural character, but may correct the evil and improve the good that is in it, or do the very contrary, are sown betimes, and much sooner than is commonly supposed.

posed. It is equally certain, that we shall gather or not gather experience, be the better or the worse for this experience, when we come into the world and mingle amongst mankind, according to the temper of mind and the turn of thought that we have acquired beforehand and bring along with us. They will tincture all our future acquisitions; so that the very same experience, which secures the judgment of one man, or excites him to virtue, shall lead another into error, or plunge him into vice. From hence it follows, that the study of history has in this respect a double advantage. If experience alone can make us perfect in our parts, experience cannot begin to teach them till we are actually on the stage: whereas, by a previous application to this study, we conn them over at least, before we appear there: we are not quite unprepared; we learn our parts sooner, and we learn them better.

Let me explain what I mean, by an example. There is scarce any folly or vice more epidemical among the sons of men, than that ridiculous and hurtful vanity, by which the people of each country are apt to prefer themselves to those of every other; and to make their own customs, and manners, and opinions, the standards of right and wrong, of true and false. The Chinese mandarins were strangely surpris'd, and almost incredulous, when the Jesuits shew'd them how small a figure their empire made in the general map of the world. The Samojedes wondered much at the Czar of Muscovy, for

for not living among them: and the Hottentot, who returned from Europe, stripped himself naked as soon as he came home, put on his bracelets of guts and garbage, and grew stinking and lowly as fast as he could. Now nothing can contribute more to prevent us from being tainted with this vanity, than to accustom ourselves early to contemplate the different nations of the earth, in that vast map which history spreads before us, in their rise and their fall, in their barbarous and civilized states, in the likeness and unlikeness of them all to one another, and of each to itself. By frequently renewing this prospect to the mind, the Mexican with his cap and coat of feathers, sacrificing a human victim to his god, will not appear more savage to our eyes, than the Spaniard with an hat on his head, and a gonilla round his neck, sacrificing whole nations to his ambition, his avarice, and even the wantonness of his cruelty. I might shew, by a multitude of other examples, how history prepares us for experience, and guides us in it: and many of these would be both curious and important. I might likewise bring several other instances, wherein history serves to purge the mind of those national partialities and prejudices that we are apt to contract in our education, and that experience for the most part rather confirms than removes; because it is for the most part confined, like our education. But I apprehend growing too prolix, and shall therefore conclude this head by observing, that tho' an early and proper application to the study of

C 2

history

history will contribute extremely to keep our minds free from a ridiculous partiality in favour of our own country, and a vicious prejudice against others; yet the same study will create in us a preference of affection to our own country. There is a story told of *Abgarus*. He brought several beasts, taken in different places, to Rome, they say, and let them loose before *Augustus*: every beast ran immediately to that part of the Circus where a parcel of earth taken from his native soil had been laid. *Credat Judæus Appella*. This tale might pass on *Josephus*; for in him, I believe, I read it: but surely the love of our country is a lesson of reason, not an institution of nature. Education and habit, obligation and interest, attach us to it; not instinct. It is, however, so necessary to be cultivated, and the prosperity of all societies, as well as the grandeur of some, depends upon it so much, that orators by their eloquence, and poets by their enthusiasm, have endeavoured to work up this precept of morality into a principle of passion. But the examples which we find in history, improved by the lively descriptions, and the just applauses or censures of historians, will have a much better and more permanent effect, than declamation, or song, or the dry ethics of mere philosophy. In fine, to converse with historians, is to keep good company: many of them were excellent men; and those who were not such, have taken care, however, to appear such in their writings. It must be therefore of great use, to prepare ourselves, by this conversation, for that
of

of the world; and to receive our first impressions, and to acquire our first habits, in a scene where images of virtue and vice are continually represented to us in the colours that belong properly to them, before we enter on another scene, where virtue and vice are too often confounded, and what belongs to one is ascribed to the other.

Besides the advantage of beginning our acquaintance with mankind sooner, and of bringing with us into the world, and the business of it, such a cast of thought and such a temper of mind as will enable us to make a better use of our experience; there is this further advantage in the study of history, that the improvement we make by it extends to more objects, and is made at the expence of other men: whereas that improvement, which is the effect of our own experience, is confined to fewer objects, and is made at our own expence. To state the account fairly, therefore, between these two improvements; though the latter be the more valuable, yet allowance being made on one side for the much greater number of examples that history presents to us, and deduction being made on the other of the price we often pay for our experience, the value of the former will rise in proportion. “I have recorded these things,” says *Polybius*, after giving an account of the defeat of *Regulus*, “that they who read these commentaries may be rendered better by them: for all men have two ways of improvement; one arising from their own

“ experience, and one from the experience of
“ others. *Evidentior quidem illa est, quæ per*
“ *propria ducit infortunia; at tutior illa, quæ*
“ *per aliena.*” I use *Casaubon*’s translation. *Po-*
lybius goes on, and concludes, “ that since the
“ first of these ways exposes us to great labour
“ and peril, whilst the second works the same
“ good effect, and is attended by no evil cir-
“ cumstance, every one ought to take for
“ granted, that the study of history is the best
“ school where he can learn how to conduct
“ himself in all the situations of life.” *Regulus*
had seen at Rome many examples of magnani-
mity, of frugality, of the contempt of riches,
and of other virtues; and these virtues he prac-
tised. But he had not learned, nor had oppor-
tunity of learning, another lesson, which the
examples recorded in history inculcate fre-
quently, the lesson of moderation. An insa-
tiable thirst of military fame, an unconfined am-
bition of extending their empire, an extrava-
gant confidence in their own courage and force,
an insolent contempt of their enemies, and an
impetuous over-bearing spirit with which they
pursued all their enterprizes, composed in his
days the distinguishing character of a Roman.
Whatever the senate and people resolved, to
the members of the commonwealth appeared
both practicable and just. Neither difficulties
nor dangers could check them; and their fa-
ges had not yet discovered, that virtues in ex-
cess degenerate into vices. Notwithstanding the
beautiful rant which *Horace* puts into his mouth,

I make no doubt that *Regulus* learned at Carthage those lessons of moderation which he had not learned at Rome: but he learned them by experience, and the fruits of this experience came too late, and cost too dear; for they cost the total defeat of the Roman army, the prolongation of a calamitous war which might have been finished by a glorious peace, the loss of liberty to thousands of Roman citizens, and to *Regulus* himself the loss of life in the midst of torments, if we are entirely to credit what is perhaps exaggeration in the Roman authors.

There is another advantage, worthy our observation, that belongs to the study of history; and that I shall mention here, not only because of the importance of it, but because it leads me immediately to speak of the nature of the improvement we ought to have in our view, and of the method in which it seems to me that this improvement ought to be pursued: two particulars from which your Lordship may think perhaps that I digress too long. The advantage I mean consists in this, that the examples which history presents to us, both of men and of events, are generally complete: the whole example is before us, and consequently the whole lesson, or sometimes the various lessons, which philosophy proposes to teach us by this example. For first, as to men; we see them at their whole length in history, and we see them generally there through a medium less partial at least than that of experience: for I imagine, that a whig or a tory, whilst those parties subsisted,

C 4

would

would have condemned in *Saturninus* the spirit of faction which he applauded in his own tribunes, and would have applauded in *Drusus* the spirit of moderation which he despised in those of the contrary party, and which he suspected and hated in those of his own party. The villain who has imposed on mankind by his power or cunning, and whom experience could not unmask for a time, is unmasked at length: and the honest man, who has been misunderstood or defamed, is justified before his story ends. Or if this does not happen; if the villain dies with his mask on, in the midst of applause, and honor, and wealth, and power; and if the honest man dies under the same load of calumny and disgrace under which he lived, driven perhaps into exile, and exposed to want; yet we see historical justice executed, the name of one branded with infamy, and that of the other celebrated with panegyric to succeeding ages. “Præcipuum munus annalium reor, ne
“virtutes fileantur; utque pravis dictis fac-
“tisque ex posteritate et infamia metus sit.” Thus, according to *Tacitus*, and according to truth, from which his judgments seldom deviate, the principal duty of history is to erect a tribunal, like that among the Egyptians, mentioned by *Diodorus Siculus*, where men and princes themselves were tried, and condemned or acquitted, after their deaths; where those who had not been punished for their crimes, and those who had not been honoured for their virtues, received a just retribution. The sen-
tence

tence is pronounced in one case, as it was in the other, too late to correct or recompense ; but it is pronounced in time to render these examples of general instruction to mankind. Thus *Cicero*, that I may quote one instance out of thousands, and that I may do justice to the general character of that great man, whose particular failing I have censured so freely ; *Cicero*, I say, was abandoned by *Octavius*, and massacred by *Anthony*. But let any man read this fragment of *Arellius Fuscus*, and chuse which he would wish to have been, the orator, or the triumvir : “ Quoad humanum genus, incolume
“ manserit ; quamdiu usus literis, honor sum-
“ mæ eloquentiæ pretium erit, quamdiu rerum
“ natura aut fortuna steterit, aut memoria du-
“ raverit, admirabile posteris vigebris ingenium,
“ et uno proscriptus seculo, proscribes Anto-
“ nium omnibus.”

Thus again, as to events that stand recorded in history ; we see them all, we see them as they followed one another, or as they produced one another, causes or effects, immediate or remote. We are cast back, as it were, into former ages : we live with the men who lived before us, and we inhabit countries that we never saw. Place is enlarged, and time prolonged, in this manner ; so that the man who applies himself early to the study of history, may acquire in a few years, and before he sets his foot abroad in the world, not only a more extended knowledge of mankind, but the experience of more centuries than any of the patriarchs

triarchs saw. The events we are witnesses of, in the course of the longest life, appear to us very often original, unprepared, single, and unrelative, if I may use such an expression for want of a better in English; in French I would say, isolés: they appear such very often, are called accidents, and looked on as the effects of chance; a word, by the way, which is in constant use, and has frequently no determinate meaning. We get over the present difficulty, we improve the momentary advantage, as well as we can; and we look no farther. Experience can go a very little way back in discovering causes; and effects are not the objects of experience till they happen. From hence many errors in judgment, and by consequence in conduct, necessarily arise. And here too lies the difference we are speaking of between history and experience. The advantage on the side of the former is double. In ancient history, as we have said already, the examples are complete, which are incomplete in the course of experience. The beginning, the progression, and the end, appear, not of particular reigns, much less of particular enterprizes, or systems of policy alone, but of governments, of nations, of empires, and of all the various systems that have succeeded one another in the course of their duration. In modern history, the examples may be, and sometimes are, incomplete; but they have this advantage when they are so, that they serve to render complete the examples of our own time. Experience is doubly

doubly defective; we are born too late to see the beginning, and we die too soon to see the end, of many things. History supplies both these defects. Modern history shews the causes, when experience presents the effects alone: and ancient history enables us to guess at the effects, when experience presents the causes alone. Let me explain my meaning by two examples of these kinds; one past, the other actually present.

When the revolution of one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight happened, few men then alive, I suppose, went farther in their search after the causes of it, than the extravagant attempt of King *James* against the religion and liberty of his people. His former conduct, and the passages of King *Charles* the Second's reign, might rankle still at the hearts of some men, but could not be set to account among the causes of his deposition; since he had succeeded, notwithstanding them, peaceably to the throne: and the nation in general, even many of those who would have excluded him from it, were desirous, or at least willing, that he should continue in it. Now this example, thus stated, affords, no doubt, much good instruction to the kings and people of Britain. But this instruction is not entire, because the example thus stated, and confined to the experience of that age, is imperfect. King *James*'s mal-administration rendered a revolution necessary and practicable; but his mal-administration, as well as all his preceding conduct, was caused by his bi-
got

got-attachment to Popery and to the principles of arbitrary government, from which no warning could divert him. His bigot-attachment to these was caused by the exile of the royal family: this exile was caused by the usurpation of *Cromwell*; and *Cromwell*'s usurpation was the effect of a former rebellion, begun not without reason on account of liberty, but without any valid pretence on account of religion. During this exile, our princes caught the taint of Popery and foreign politics. We made them unfit to govern us; and after that, were forced to recal them that they might rescue us out of anarchy. It was necessary therefore, your Lordship sees, at the Revolution, and it is more so now, to go back in history, at least as far as I have mentioned, and perhaps farther, even to the beginning of King *James* the First's reign, to render this event a complete example, and to develope all the wise, honest, and salutary precepts, with which it is pregnant, both to king and subject.

The other example shall be taken from what has succeeded the revolution. Few men at that time looked forward enough, to foresee the necessary consequences of the new constitution of the revenue that was soon afterwards formed; nor of the method of funding that immediately took place; which, absurd as they are, have continued ever since, till it is become scarce possible to alter them. Few people, I say, foresaw how the creation of funds, and the multiplication of taxes, would increase yearly the power of the crown, and bring our liberties,
by

by a natural and necessary progression, into more real, though less apparent, danger, than they were in before the revolution. The excessive ill husbandry practised from the very beginning of King *William's* reign, and which laid the foundations of all we feel and all we fear, was not the effect of ignorance, mistake, or what we call chance, but of design and scheme in those who had the sway at that time. I am not so uncharitable, however, as to believe that they intended to bring upon their country all the mischiefs that we who came after them experience and apprehend. No; they saw the measures they took, singly and unrelatively, or relatively alone to some immediate object. The notion of attaching men to the new government, by tempting them to embark their fortunes on the same bottom, was a reason of state to some: the notion of creating a new, that is, a moneyed interest, in opposition to the landed interest or as a balance to it, and of acquiring a superior influence in the city of London at least by the establishment of great corporations, was a reason of party to others: and I make no doubt that the opportunity of amassing immense estates by the management of funds, by trafficking in paper, and by all the arts of jobbing, was a reason of private interest to those who supported and improved this scheme of iniquity, if not to those who devised it. They looked no farther. Nay, we who came after them, and have long tasted the bitter fruits of the corruption they planted, were
far

far from taking such an alarm at our distress and our danger as they deserved; till the most remote and fatal effect of causes, laid by the last generation, was very near becoming an object of experience in this. Your Lordship, I am sure, sees at once how much a due reflection on the passages of former times, as they stand recorded in the history of our own and of other countries, would have deterred a free people from trusting the sole management of so great a revenue, and the sole nomination of those legions of officers employed in it, to their chief magistrate. There remained indeed no pretence for doing so, when once a salary was settled on the prince, and the public revenue was no longer in any sense his revenue, nor the public expence his expence. Give me leave to add, that it would have been, and would be still, more decent with regard to the prince, and less repugnant if not more conformable to the principles and practice too of our government, to take this power and influence from the prince, or to share it with him; than to exclude men from the privilege of representing their fellow-subjects who would chuse them in parliament, purely because they are employed and trusted by the prince.

Your Lordship sees, not only how much a due reflection upon the experience of other ages and countries would have pointed out national corruption, as the natural and necessary consequence of investing the Crown with the management of so great a revenue; but also the loss of liberty,

liberty, as the natural and necessary consequence of national corruption.

These two examples explain sufficiently what they are intended to explain. It only remains therefore upon this head, to observe the difference between the two manners in which history supplies the defects of our own experience. It shews us causes as in fact they were laid, with their immediate effects: and it enables us to guess at future events. It can do no more, in the nature of things. My lord *Bacon*, in his second book of the advancement of learning, having in his mind, I suppose, what *Philo* and *Josephus* asserted of *Moses*, affirms divine history to have this prerogative, that the narration may be before the fact as well as after. But since the ages of prophecy, as well as miracles, are past, we must content ourselves to guess at what will be, by what has been: we have no other means in our power, and history furnishes us with these. How we are to improve and apply these means, as well as how we are to acquire them, shall be deduced more particularly in another letter.

L E T T E R III.

1. An objection against the utility of history removed.
2. The false and true aims of those who study it.
3. Of the history of the first

first ages ; with reflections on the state of ancient history, profane and sacred.

WERE these letters to fall into the hands of some ingenious persons who adorn the age we live in, your Lordship's correspondent would be joked upon for his project of improving men in virtue and wisdom by the study of history. The general characters of men, it would be said, are determined by their natural constitutions, as their particular actions are by immediate objects. Many very conversant in history would be cited, who have proved ill men or bad politicians ; and a long roll would be produced of others, who have arrived at a great pitch of private and public virtue, without any assistance of this kind. Something has been said already to anticipate this objection ; but, since I have heard several persons affirm such propositions with great confidence, a loud laugh, or a silent sneer at the pedants who presumed to think otherwise ; I will spend a few paragraphs, with your Lordship's leave, to shew that such affirmations (for to affirm, amongst these fine men, is to reason) either prove too much, or prove nothing.

If our general characters were determined absolutely, as they are certainly influenced, by our constitutions, and if our particular actions were so by immediate objects ; all instruction by precept as well as example, and all endeavours to form the moral character by education, would be unnecessary. Even the little care that

is

is taken, and surely it is impossible to take less, in the training up our youth, would be too much. But the truth is widely different from this representation of it; for, what is vice, and what is virtue? I speak of them in a large and philosophical sense. The former is, I think, no more than the excess, abuse, and misapplication of appetites, desires, and passions, natural and innocent, nay, useful and necessary. The latter consists in the moderation and government, in the use and application of these appetites, desires, and passions, according to the rules of reason, and therefore often in opposition to their own blind impulse.

What now is education; that part, that principal and most neglected part of it, I mean, which tends to form the moral character? It is, I think, an institution designed to lead men, from their tender years, by precept and example, by argument and authority, to the practice, and to the habit of practising these rules. The stronger our appetites, desires, and passions, are, the harder indeed is the task of education: but when the efforts of education are proportioned to this strength, although our keenest appetites and desires, and our ruling passions, cannot be reduced to a quiet and uniform submission, yet, are not their excesses asswaged? are not their abuses and misapplications, in some degree, diverted or checked? Though the pilot cannot lay the storm, cannot he carry the ship, by his art, better through it, and often prevent the wreck that would always happen without him? If *Alexander*,

ander, who loved wine, and was naturally choleric, had been bred under the severity of Roman discipline, it is probable he would neither have made a bonfire of Persepolis for his whore, nor have killed his friend. If *Scipio*, who was naturally given to women, (for which anecdote we have, if I mistake not, the authority of *Polybius*, as well as some verses of *Nævius* preserved by *A. Gellius*,) had been educated by *Olympias* at the court of *Philip*, it is improbable that he would have restored the beautiful Spaniard. In short, if the renowned *Socrates* had not corrected nature by art, this first apostle of the Gentiles had been a very profligate fellow, by his own confession; for he was inclined to all the vices *Zopyrus* imputed to him, as they say, on the observation of his physiognomy.

With him, therefore, who denies the effects of education, it would be in vain to dispute, and with him who admits them there can be no dispute, concerning that share which I ascribe to the study of history, in forming our moral characters, and making us better men. The very persons who pretend that inclinations cannot be restrained, nor habits corrected, against our natural bent, would be the first perhaps to prove, in certain cases, the contrary. A fortune at court, or the favours of a lady, have prevailed on many to conceal, and they could not conceal without restraining, which is one step towards correcting, the vices they were by nature addicted to the most. Shall we imagine now, that the beauty of virtue, and the deformity

mity of vice; the charms of a bright and lasting reputation; the terror of being delivered over as criminals to all posterity; the real benefit arising from a conscientious discharge of the duty we owe to others, which benefit fortune can neither hinder nor take away; and the reasonableness of conforming ourselves to the designs of God, manifested in the constitution of the human nature; shall we imagine, I say, that all these are not able to acquire the same power over those who are continually called upon to a contemplation of them, and they who apply themselves to the study of history are so called upon, as other motives, mean and sordid in comparison of these, can usurp on other men?

2. That the study of history, far from making us wiser, and more useful citizens, as well as better men, may be of no advantage whatsoever; that it may serve to render us mere antiquaries and scholars; or that it may help to make us forward coxcombs, and prating pedants; I have already allowed. But this is not the fault of history: and to convince us that it is not, we need only contrast the true use of history with the use that is made of it by such men as these. We ought always to keep in mind, that history is philosophy teaching by examples how to conduct ourselves in all the situations of private and public life; that therefore we must apply ourselves to it in a philosophical spirit and manner, that we must rise from particular to general knowledge, and that we must fit ourselves for the society and business of man-

kind, by accustoming our minds to reflect and meditate on the characters we find described and the course of events we find related there. Particular examples may be of use sometimes in particular cases ; but the application of them is dangerous. It must be done with the utmost circumspection, or it will be seldom done with success. And yet one would think that this was the principal use of the study of history, by what has been written on the subject. I know not whether *Machiavel* himself is quite free from defect on this account: he seems to carry the use and application of particular examples sometimes too far. *Marius* and *Catulus* passed the Alps, met and defeated the Cimbri beyond the frontiers of Italy. Is it safe to conclude from hence, that whenever one people is invaded by another, the invaded ought to meet and fight the invaders at a distance from their frontiers? *Machiavel's* countryman, *Guicciardin*, was aware of the danger that might arise from such an application of examples. *Peter* of Medicis had involved himself in great difficulties, when those war and calamities began, which *Lewis Sforza* first drew and entailed on Italy, by flattering the ambition of *Charles VIII.* in order to gratify his own, and calling the French into that country. *Peter* owed his distress to his folly, in departing from the general tenor of conduct his father *Laurence* had held, and hoped to relieve himself by imitating his father's example in one particular instance. At a time when the wars with the Pope and king of Naples had reduced

Lau-

Laurence to circumstances of great danger, he took the resolution of going to *Ferdinand*, and of treating in person with that prince. The resolution appears, in history, imprudent and almost desperate: were we informed of the secret reasons on which this great man acted, it would appear, very possibly, a wise and safe measure. It succeeded; and *Laurence* brought back with him public peace, and private security. As soon as the French troops entered the dominions of Florence, *Peter* was struck with a panic terror, went to *Charles VIII.* put the port of Leghorn, the fortresses of Pisa, and all the keys of the country, into this prince's hands; whereby he disarmed the Florentine commonwealth, and ruined himself. He was deprived of his authority, and driven out of the city, by the just indignation of the magistrates and people: and in the treaty which they made afterwards with the king of France, it was stipulated, that *Peter* should not remain within an hundred miles of the state, nor his brothers within the same distance of the city of Florence. On this occasion *Guicciardin* observes how dangerous it is to govern ourselves by particular examples; since, to have the same success, we must have the same prudence, and the same fortune; and since the example must not only answer the case before us in general, but in every minute circumstance. This is the sense of that admirable historian, and these are his words---“ è senza dubbio molto pe-

“ ricoloso il governarsi con gl' esempi, se non
“ concorrono, non solo in generale, ma in tutti

“ i particolari, le medesime ragioni ; se le cose
“ non sono regolate con la medesima prudenza,
“ & se oltre a tutti li altri fondamenti, non,
“ v’ha la parte sua la medesima fortuna.” An
observation that *Boileau* makes, and a rule he
lays down, in speaking of translations, will pro-
perly find their place here, and serve to explain
still better what I would establish. “ To trans-
“ late servilely into modern language, an an-
“ cient author, phrase by phrase, and word by
“ word, is preposterous: nothing can be more
“ unlike the original than such a copy. It is
“ not to shew, it is to disguise the author: and
“ he who has known him only in this dress,
“ would not know him in his own. A good
“ writer, instead of taking this inglorious and
“ unprofitable task upon him, will *jouster con-*
“ *tre l’original*, rather imitate than translate, and
“ rather emulate than imitate: he will transfuse
“ the sense and spirit of the original into his
“ own work, and will endeavour to write as
“ the ancient author would have wrote had he
“ writ in the same language.” Now, to im-
prove by examples, is to improve by imitation.
We must catch the spirit, if we can, and con-
form ourselves to the reason of them ; but we
must not affect to translate servilely into our con-
duct, if your Lordship will allow me the expres-
sion, the particular conduct of those good and
great men whose images history sets before us.
Codrus and the *Decii* devoted themselves to
death: one, because an oracle had foretold that
the army whose general was killed would be vic-
torious ;

torious; the others, in compliance with a superstition that bore great analogy to a ceremony practised in the old Egyptian church, and added afterwards, as many others of the same origin were, to the ritual of the Israelites. These are examples of great magnanimity, to be sure, and of magnanimity employed in the most worthy cause. In the early days of the Athenian and Roman government, when the credit of oracles and all kinds of superstition prevailed, when heaven was piously thought to delight in blood, and even human blood was shed under wild notions of atonement, propitiation, purgation, expiation, and satisfaction; they who set such examples as these, acted an heroical and a rational part too. But if a general should act the same part now, and, in order to secure his victory, get killed as fast as he could; he might pass for an hero, but I am sure he would pass for a madman. Even these examples, however, are of use: they excite us at least to venture our lives freely in the service of our country, by proposing to our imitation men who devoted themselves to certain death in the service of theirs. They shew us what a turn of imagination can operate; and how the greatest trifle, nay, the greatest absurdity, dressed up in the solemn airs of religion, can carry ardour and confidence, or the contrary sentiments, into the breasts of thousands.

There are certain general principles, and rules of life and conduct, which always must be true, because they are conformable to the invariable

nature of things. He who studies history as he would study philosophy, will soon distinguish and collect them; and, by doing so, will soon form to himself a general system of ethics and politics on the surest foundations, on the trial of these principles and rules in all ages, and on the confirmation of them by universal experience. I said he will distinguish them: for once more I must say, that as to particular modes of actions, and measures of conduct, which the customs of different countries, the manners of different ages, and the circumstances of different conjunctures, have appropriated, as it were; it is always ridiculous, or imprudent and dangerous, to employ them. But this is not all. By contemplating the vast variety of particular characters and events; by examining the strange combinations of causes, different, remote, and seemingly opposite, that often concur in producing one effect; and the surprising fertility of one single and uniform cause in the producing of a multitude of effects, as different, as remote, and seemingly as opposite; by tracing carefully, as carefully as if the subject he considers were of personal and immediate concern to him, all the minute and sometimes scarcely perceivable circumstances, either in the characters of actors, or in the course of actions, that history enables him to trace, and according to which the success of affairs, even the greatest, is mostly determined; by these, and such methods as these, for I might descend into a much greater detail, a man of parts may improve the study of history to its proper

proper and principal use ; he may sharpen the penetration, fix the attention of his mind, and strengthen his judgment ; he may acquire the faculty and the habit of discerning quicker, and looking farther ; and of exerting that flexibility, and steadiness, which are necessary to be joined in the conduct of all affairs that depend on the concurrence or opposition of other men.

Mr *Locke*, I think, recommends the study of geometry even to those who have no design of being geometricians : and he gives a reason for it, that may be applied to the present case. Such persons may forget every problem that has been proposed, and every solution that they or others have given ; but the habit of pursuing long trains of ideas will remain with them, and they will appear through the mazes of sophism, and discover a latent truth, where persons who have not this habit will never find it.

In this manner, the study of history will prepare us for action and observation. History is the ancient author : experience is the modern language. We form our taste on the first ; we translate the sense and reason, we transfuse the spirit and force : but we imitate only the particular graces of the original ; we imitate them according to the idiom of our own tongue, that is, we substitute often equivalents in the lieu of them, and are far from affecting to copy them servilely. To conclude : As experience is conversant about the present, and the present enables us to guess at the future ; so history is conversant about the past, and by knowing the things

things that have been, we become better able to judge of the things that are.

This use, my Lord, which I make the proper and principal use of the study of history, is not insisted on by those who have writ concerning the method to be followed in this study: and since we propose different ends, we must of course take different ways. Few of their treatises have fallen into my hands: one, the method of *Bodin*, a man famous in his time, I remember to have read. I took it up with much expectation many years ago; I went through it, and remained extremely disappointed. He might have given almost any other title to his book as properly as that which stands before it. There are not many pages in it that relate any more to his subject than a tedious fifth chapter, wherein he accounts for the characters of nations according to their positions on the globe, and according to the influence of the stars; and assures his reader that nothing can be more necessary than such a disquisition, “ad universam
“historiarum cognitionem, et incorruptum earum
“judicium.” In his method, we are to take first a general view of universal history, and chronology, in short abstracts; and then to study all particular histories and systems. *Seneca* speaks of men who spend their whole lives in learning how to act in life, *dum vitæ instrumenta conquirunt*. I doubt that this method of *Bodin* would conduct us in the same, or as bad a way; would leave us no time for action, or would make us unfit for it. A huge common-
place

place book, wherein all the remarkable sayings and facts that we find in history are to be registered, may enable a man to talk or write like *Bodin*; but will never make him a better man, nor enable him to promote, like an useful citizen, the security, the peace, the welfare, or the grandeur, of the community to which he belongs. I shall proceed therefore to speak of a method that leads to such purposes as these directly and certainly, without any regard to the methods that have been prescribed by others.

I think, then, we must be on our guard against this very affectation of learning, and this very wantonness of curiosity, which the examples and precepts we commonly meet with are calculated to flatter and indulge. We must neither dwell too long in the dark, nor wander about till we lose our way in the light. We are too apt to carry systems of philosophy beyond all our ideas, and systems of history beyond all our memorials. The philosopher begins with reason, and ends with imagination. The historian inverts this order: he begins without memorials, and he sometimes ends with them. This silly custom is so prevalent among men of letters who apply themselves to the study of history, and has so much prejudice and so much authority on the side of it, that your Lordship must give me leave to speak a little more particularly and plainly than I have done, in favour of common sense, against an absurdity which is almost sanctified.

REFLECTIONS

On the State of Ancient HISTORY.

THE nature of man, and the constant course of human affairs, render it impossible that the first ages of any new nation which forms itself should afford authentic materials for history. We have none such concerning the originals of any of those nations that actually subsist. Shall we expect to find them concerning the originals of nations dispersed, or extinguished, two or three thousand years ago? If a thread of dark and uncertain traditions, therefore, is made, as it commonly is, the introduction to history; we should touch it lightly, and run swiftly over it; far from insisting on it, either as authors or readers. Such introductions are at best no more than fanciful preludes, that try the instruments, and precede the concert. He must be void of judgment and taste, one would think, who can take the first for true history, or the last for true harmony. And yet so it has been, and so it is, not in Germany and Holland alone; but in Italy, in France, and in England, where genius has abounded, and taste has been long refined. Our great scholars have dealt and deal in fables at least as much as our poets; with this difference to the disadvantage of the former, to whom I may apply the remark as justly as *Seneca* applied it to the dialecticians---“tristius inepti sunt. Illi ex professo
“lasciviunt; hi agere seipfos aliquid existi-
“mant.”

“mant.” Learned men, in learned and inquisitive ages, who possessed many advantages that we have not, and among others that of being placed so many centuries nearer the original truths that are the objects of so much laborious search, despaired of finding them; and gave fair warning to posterity, if posterity would have taken it. The ancient geographers, as *Plutarch* says in the life of *Theseus*, when they laid down in their maps the little extent of sea and land that was known to them, left great spaces void. In some of these spaces they wrote, Here are sandy deserts; in others, Here are impassable marshes; Here is a chain of inhospitable mountains; or, Here is a frozen ocean. Just so, both he and other historians, when they related fabulous originals, were not wanting to set out the bounds beyond which there was neither history nor chronology. *Censorinus* has preserved the distinction of three æras established by *Varro*. This learned Roman antiquary did not determine whether the first period had any beginning; but fixed the end of it at the first, that is, according to him, the Ogygian, deluge; which he placed, I think, some centuries backwarder than *Julius Africanus* thought fit to place it afterwards. To this æra of absolute darkness he supposed that a kind of twilight succeeded, from the Ogygian deluge to the Olympic æra; and this he called the Fabulous Age. From this vulgar æra when *Coræbus* was crowned victor, and long after the true æra when these games were instituted by *Iphitus*, the Greeks pretend to be able
to

to digest their history with some order, clearness, and certainty: *Varro* therefore looked on it as the break of day, or the beginning of the Historical Age. He might do so the rather, perhaps, because he included by it the date he likewise fixed, or, upon recollection, that the elder *Cato* had fixed, of the foundation of Rome within the period from which he supposed that historical truth was to be found. But yet most certain it is, that the history and chronology of the ages that follow are as confused and uncertain, as the history and chronology of those which immediately precede this æra.

1. *The State of Ancient Profane History.*

THE Greeks did not begin to write in prose, till *Pherecides* of *Syros* introduced the custom: and *Cadmus Milesius* was their first historian. Now these men flourished long after the true, or even the vulgar, Olympic æra; for *Josephus* affirms, and in this he has great probability on his side, that *Cadmus Milesius*, and *Acusilaus Argivus*, in a word the oldest historians in Greece, were very little more ancient than the expedition of the Persians against the Greeks. As several centuries passed between the Olympic æra and these first historians, there passed likewise several more between these and the first Greek chronologers. *Timæus* about the time of *Ptolemy Philadelphus*, and *Eratosthenes* about that of *Ptolemy Evergetes*, seem first to have digested the events recorded by them, according to the Olympiads. Precedent writers mentioned

ed sometimes the Olympiads; but this rule of reckoning was not brought into established use sooner. The rule could not serve to render history more clear and certain till it was followed: it was not followed till about five hundred years after the Olympic æra. There remains therefore no pretence to place the beginning of the historical age so high as *Varro* placed it, by five hundred years.

Hellanicus indeed, and others, pretended to give the originals of cities and governments, and to deduce their narrations from great antiquity. Their works are lost; but we can judge how inconsiderable the loss is, by the writings of that age which remain, and by the report of those who had seen the others. For instance, *Herodotus* was cotemporary with *Hellanicus*. *Herodotus* was inquisitive enough, in all conscience; and proposed to publish all he could learn of the antiquities of the Ionians, Lydians, Phrygians, Egyptians, Babylonians, Medes, and Persians; that is, of almost all the nations who were known in his time to exist. If he wrote *Assyriacs*, we have them not; but we are sure that this word was used proverbially to signify fabulous legends, soon after his time, and when the mode of publishing such relations and histories prevailed among the Greeks.

In the nine books we have, he goes back indeed almost to the Olympic æra, without taking notice of it however; but he goes back only to tell an old woman's tale, of a king who lost his crown for shewing his wife naked to his favourite:
rite:

rite : and from *Candaules* and *Gyges* he hastens, or rather he takes a great leap, down to *Cyrus*.

Something like a thread of history of the Medes, and then of the Persians, to the flight of Xerxes, which happened in his own time, is carried on. The events of his own time are related with an air of history. But all accounts of the Greeks as well as the Persians, which precede these, and all the accounts which he gives occasionally of other nations, were drawn up most manifestly on broken, perplexed, and doubtful scrapes of tradition. He had neither original records, nor any authentic memorials to guide him ; and yet these are the sole foundations of true history. *Herodotus* flourished, I think, little more than half a century, and *Xenophon* little more than a whole century, after the death of *Cyrus* : and yet how various and repugnant are the relations made by these two historians, of the birth, life, and death, of this prince ? If most histories had come down from these ages to ours, the uncertainty and inutility of them all would be but the more manifest. We should find that *Acusilaus* rejected the traditions of *Hesiod*, that *Hellanicus* contradicted *Acusilaus*, that *Ephorus* accused *Hellanicus*, that *Timæus* accused *Ephorus*, and all posterior writers *Timæus*. This is the report of *Josephus*. But, in order to shew the ignorance and falsehood of all those writers thro' whom the traditions of profane antiquity came to the Greeks, I will quote to your Lordship a much better authority than that of *Josephus* ; the authority of one
who

who had no prejudice to bias him, no particular cause to defend, nor system of ancient history to establish, and all the helps, as well as talents, necessary to make him a competent judge. The man I mean, is *Strabo*.

Speaking of the *Massagetæ* in his eleventh book, he writes to this effect: That no author had given a true account of them, though several had writ of the war that *Cyrus* waged against them; and that historians had found as little credit in what they had related concerning the affairs of the Persians, Medes, and Syrians. That this was due to their folly: For, observing that those who wrote fables professedly were held in esteem, these men imagined that they should render their writings more agreeable, if, under the appearance and pretence of true history, they related what they had neither seen nor heard from persons able to give them true information; and that accordingly their only aim had been to dress up pleasing and marvellous relations. That one may better give credit to *Hesiod* and *Homer*, when they talk of their heroes, nay, even to dramatic poets, than to *Ctesias*, *Herodotus*, *Hellanicus*, and their followers. That it is not safe to give credit even to the greatest part of the historians who writ concerning *Alexander*; since they too, encouraged by the great reputation of this conqueror, by the distance to which he carried his arms, and by the difficulty of disproving what they said of actions performed in regions so remote, were apt to deceive. That indeed, when the Roman em-

E

pire

pire on one side, and the Parthian on the other, came to extend themselves, the truth of things grew to be better known.

You see, my Lord, not only how late profane history began to be writ by the Greeks, but how much later it began to be writ with any regard to truth ; and consequently what wretched materials the learned men, who arose after the age of *Alexander*, had to employ, when they attempted to form systems of ancient history and chronology. We have some remains of that laborious compiler *Diodorus Siculus* ; but do we find in him any thread of ancient history, I mean, that which passed for ancient in his time ? What complaints, on the contrary, does he not make of former historians ? how frankly does he confess the little and uncertain light he had to follow in his researches ? Yet *Diodorus*, as well as *Plutarch*, and others, had not only the older Greek historians, but the more modern antiquaries, who pretended to have searched into the records and registers of nations ; even at that time renowned for their antiquity. *Berosus*, for instance, and *Manetho*, one a Babylonian and the other an Egyptian priest, had published the antiquities of their countries in the time of the *Ptolemies*. *Berosus* pretended to give the history of four hundred and eighty years. *Pliny*, if I remember right, for I say this on memory, speaks to this effect in the sixth book of his Natural History : and if it was so, these years were probably years of *Nabonassar*. *Manetho* began his history, God knows when, from the progress

gress of *Isis*, or some other as well ascertained period. He followed the Egyptian traditions of dynasties of Gods and Demi-Gods; and derived his anecdotes from the first *Mercury*, who had inscribed them, in sacred characters, on antediluvian pillars; antediluvian, at least, according to our received chronology, from which the second *Mercury* had transcribed them, and inserted them into his works. We have not these antiquities; for the monk of *Viterbo* was soon detected: and if we had them, they would either add to our uncertainty, and increase the chaos of learning, or tell us nothing worth our knowledge. For thus I reason: Had they given particular and historical accounts conformable to the scriptures of the Jews, *Josephus*, *Julius Africanus*, and *Eusebius*, would have made quite other extracts from their writings, and would have altered and contradicted them less. The accounts they gave, therefore, were repugnant to sacred writ, or they were defective: they would have established pyrrhonism, or have baulked our curiosity.

2. Of Sacred History.

WHAT memorials therefore remain to give us light into the originals of ancient nations, and the history of those ages we commonly call the First Ages? The Bible, it will be said; that is, the historical part of it in the Old Testament. But, my Lord, even these divine books must be reputed insufficient to the purpose, by every candid and impartial man who considers

either their authority as histories, or the matter they contain. For what are they? and how came they to us? At the time when *Alexander* carried his arms into Asia, a people of Syria, till then unknown, became known to the Greeks: this people had been slaves to the Egyptians, Assyrians, Medes, and Persians, as these several empires prevailed: ten parts in twelve of them had been transplanted by ancient conquerors, and melted down and lost in the east, several ages before the establishment of the empire that *Alexander* destroyed; the other two parts had been carried captive to Babylon a little before the same æra. This captivity was not indeed perpetual, like the other: but it lasted so long, and such circumstances, whatever they were, accompanied it, that the captives forgot their country, and even their language, the Hebrew dialect at least and character; and a few of them only could be wrought upon, by the zeal of some particular men, to return home, when the indulgence of the Persian monarchs gave them leave to rebuild their city and to repeople their ancient patrimony. Even this remnant of the nation did not continue long entire. Another great transmigration followed; and the Jews, that settled under the protection of the *Ptolemies*, forgot their language in Egypt, as the forefathers of these Jews had forgot theirs in Chaldea. More attached however to their religion in Egypt, for reasons easy to be deduced from the new institutions that prevailed after the captivity among them, than
their

their ancestors had been in Chaldea, a version of their sacred writings was made into Greek at Alexandria, not long after the canon of these scriptures had been finished at Jerufalem; for many years could not intervene between the death of *Simon* the Just, by whom this canon was finished, if he died during the reign of *Ptolemy Soter*, and the beginning of this famous translation under *Ptolemy Philadelphus*. The Hellenist Jews reported as many marvellous things to authorise, and even to sanctify, this translation, as the other Jews had reported about *Esdra*s who began, and *Simon* the Just who finished, the canon of their scriptures. These holy romances slid into tradition, and tradition became history: the fathers of our Christian church did not disdain to employ them. St *Ferome*, for instance, laughed at the story of the seventy-two elders, whose translations were found to be, upon comparifon, word for word the fame, tho' made feperately, and by men who had no communication with one another: but the fame St *Ferome*, in the fame place, quotes *Aristeas*, one of the guard of *Ptolemy Philadelphus*, as a real perfonage.

The account pretended to be written by this *Aristeas*, of all that paffed relating to the translation, was enough for his purpofe. This he retained; and he rejected only the more improbable circumftances, which had been added to the tale, and which laid it open to moft fufpicion. In this he fhewed great prudence, and better judgment, than that zealous, but weak

apologist, *Justin*, who believed the whole story himself, and endeavoured to impose it on mankind.

Thus you see, my Lord, that when we consider these books barely as histories, delivered to us on the faith of a superstitious people, among whom the custom and art of pious lying prevailed remarkably, we may be allowed to doubt whether greater credit is to be given to what they tell us concerning the original, compiled in their own country, and as it were out of the sight of the rest of the world; than we know, with such a certainty as no scholar presumes to deny, that we ought to give to what they tell us concerning the copy?

The Hellenist Jews were extremely pleased, no doubt, to have their scriptures in a language they understood, and that might spread the fame of their antiquity, and do honour to their nation, among their masters the Greeks. But yet we do not find that the authority of these books prevailed, or that even they were much known, among the Pagan world. The reason of this cannot be, that the Greeks admired nothing that was not of their own growth, *sua tantum mirantur*: for, on the contrary, they were inquisitive and credulous in the highest degree; and they collected and published at least as many idle traditions of other nations, as they propagated of their own. *Josephus* pretended, that *Theopompus*, a disciple of *Isocrates*, being about to insert in his history some things he had taken out of holy writ, the poor man became troubled

troubled in mind for several days; and that having prayed to God, during an intermission of his illness, to reveal to him the cause of it, he learned in his sleep, that this attempt was the cause; upon which he quitted the design, and was cured. If *Josephus* had been a little more consistent than he is very often, such a story as this would not have been told by one who was fond, as Jews and Christians in general have been, to create an opinion, that the Gentiles took not their history alone, but their philosophy, and all their valuable knowledge, from the Jews. Notwithstanding this story, therefore, which is told in the fifteenth book of the Jewish Antiquities, and means nothing, or means to shew that the divine Providence would not suffer anecdotes of sacred to be mingled with profane history; the practice of *Josephus* himself, and of all those who have had the same design in view, has been to confirm the former by the latter, and at any rate to suppose an appearance at least of conformity between them. We are told *Hecataeus Abderita*, for there were two of that name, writ a history favourable to the Jews: and, not to multiply instances, though I might easily do it, even *Alexander Polyhistor* is called in. He is quoted by *Josephus*, and praised by *Eusebius*, as a man of parts and great variety of learning. His testimony about the deluge, and tower of Babel, is produced by *St Cyril* in his first book against *Julian*: and *Justin* the apologist and martyr, in his exhortation to the Greeks, makes use of the same authority, among those

that mention *Moses* as a leader and prince of the Jews. Though this *Polyhistor*, if I remember right what I think I have met with in *Suidas*, spoke only of a woman he called *Moso*, “cujus scriptum est lex Hebræorum *.” Had the Greek historians been conformable to the sacred, I cannot see that their authority, which was not cotemporary, would have been of any weight. They might have copied *Moses*, and so they did *Ctesias*. But even this was not the case: whatever use a particular writer here and there might make occasionally of the scriptures, certain it is, that the Jews continued to be as much despised, and their history to be as generally neglected, nay, almost as generally unknown, for a long time at least, after the version was made at Alexandria, as they had been before. *Apion*, an Egyptian, a man of much erudition, appeared in the world some centuries afterwards. He wrote, among other antiquities, those of his own country: and as he was obliged to speak very often of the Jews, he spoke of them in a manner, neither much to their honour, nor to that of their histories. He wrote purposely against them: and *Josephus* attempted afterwards, but *Apion* was then dead, to refute him. *Apion* passed, I know, for a vain and noisy pedant; but he passed likewise for a curious, a laborious, and a learned antiquary. If he was cabalistical

or

* Μωσω, γυνη Εβραια· ης εστι συγγραμμα ο παρ Εβραιois νομ. ως ρησιν Αλεξανδρ. ο Μιλησι. ο Πολυισωρ. Suid. Lex. tom. ii. p. 583.

Αλεξανδρ. . . . ος Πολυισωρ . . . συνηγραφε βιβλια αριθμν κρειττω. κ. περι Ρωμης βιβλια πεντε. εν τουτοις λεγει, ως γυνη γεγονην Εβραια Μωσω, ης εστι συγγραμμα ο παρ Εβραιois νομος. Id. tom. i. p. 105. Edit. Cantab. 1725.

or superstitious, *Josephus* was at least as much so as he: and if he flattered *Caligula*, *Josephus* introduced himself to the court of *Nero*, and the favour of *Poppæa*, by no very honourable means, under the protection of *Aliturus* a player and a Jew; to say nothing of his applying to *Vespasian* the prophecies concerning the Messiah, nor of his accompanying *Titus* to the siege of Jerusalem.

In short, my Lord, the Jewish history never obtained any credit in the world, till Christianity was established. The foundations of this system being laid partly in these histories, and in the prophecies joined to them or inserted in them, Christianity has reflected back upon them an authority which they had not before, and this authority has prevailed wherever Christianity has spread. Both Jews and Christians hold the same books in great veneration, whilst each condemns the other for not understanding or for abusing them. But I apprehend, that the zeal of both has done much hurt, by endeavouring to extend their authority much farther than is necessary for the support perhaps of Judaism, but to be sure of Christianity. I explain myself, that I may offend no pious ear.

Simon, in the preface to his Critical History of the Old Testament, cites a divine of the faculty of Paris, who held, that the inspirations of the authors of those books, which the church receives as the word of God, should be extended no farther than to matters purely of doctrine, or to such as have a near and necessary relation
to

to these ; and that whenever these authors writ on other subjects, such as Egyptian, Assyrian, or other history, they had no more of the divine assistance than any other persons of piety. This notion of inspirations that came occasionally, that illuminated the minds and guided the hands of the sacred penmen while they were writing one page, and restrained their influence while the same authors were writing another, may be cavilled against : and what is there that may not ? But surely it deserves to be treated with respect, since it tends to establish a distinction between the legal, doctrinal, or prophetic parts of the Bible, and the historical : without which distinction it is impossible to establish the first, as evidently and as solidly as the interests of religion require ; at least, it appears impossible to me, after having examined and considered, as well as I am able, all the trials of this kind that have been made by subtle as well as learned men. The Old is said to be the foundation of the New ; and so it is in one sense : the system of religion contained in the latter, refers to the system of religion contained in the former, and supposes the truth of it. But the authority on which we receive the books of the New Testament, is so far from being founded on the authority of the Old Testament, that it is quite independent on it : the New being proved, gives authority to the Old, but borrows none from it ; and gives this authority to the particular parts only. *Christ* came to fulfil the prophecies ; but not to consecrate all the written,
ten,

ten, any more than the oral, traditions of the Jews. We must believe these traditions as far as they relate to Christianity, as far as Christianity refers to them or supposes them necessary: but we can be under no obligation to believe them any farther; since, without Christianity, we should be under no obligation to believe them at all.

It has been said by *Abbadie*, and others, “That the accidents which have happened to
“ alter the texts of the Bible, and to disfigure,
“ if I may say so, the scriptures in many re-
“ spects, could not have been prevented with-
“ out a perpetual standing miracle, and that a
“ perpetual standing miracle is not in the order
“ of providence.” Now, I can by no means subscribe to this opinion. It seems evident to my reason that the very contrary must be true; if we suppose that GOD acts towards men according to the moral fitness of things; and if we suppose that he acts arbitrarily, we can form no opinion at all. I think that these accidents would not have happened, or that the scriptures would have been preserved entirely in their genuine purity notwithstanding these accidents, if they had been entirely dictated by the *Holy Ghost*; and the proof of this probable proposition, according to our clearest and most distinct ideas of wisdom and moral fitness, is obvious and easy. But these scriptures are not so come down to us: they are come down broken and confused, full of additions, interpolations, and transpositions, made, we neither know when,
nor

nor by whom; and such, in short, as never appeared on the face of any other book, on whose authority men have agreed to rely.

This being so, my Lord, what hypothesis shall we follow? Shall we adhere to some such distinction as I have mentioned? Shall we say, for instance, that the scriptures were written originally by the authors to whom they are vulgarly ascribed; but that these authors writ nothing by inspiration, except the legal, the doctrinal, and the prophetical parts; and that in every other respect their authority is purely human, and therefore fallible? Or shall we say, that these histories are nothing more than compilations of old traditions, and abridgments of old records made in later times, as they appear to every one who reads them without prepossession, and with attention? Shall we add, that, whichever of these probabilities be true, we may believe, consistently with either, notwithstanding the decision of any divines, who know no more than you or I, or any other man, of the order of Providence, that all those parts and passages of the Old Testament, which contain prophecies, or matters of law or doctrine, and which were from the first of such importance in the designs of Providence to all future generations, and even to the whole race of mankind, have been from the first the peculiar care of providence? Shall we insist that such particular parts and passages, which are plainly marked out, and sufficiently confirmed by the system of the Christian revelation, and by the completion of the
pro-

prophecies, have been preserved from corruption by ways impenetrable to us, amidst all the changes and chances to which the books wherein they are recorded have been exposed; and that neither original writers, nor later compilers, have been suffered to make any essential alterations, such as would have falsified the law of God, and the principles of the Jewish and Christian religions, in any of these divine fundamental truths? Upon such hypotheses, we may assert without scruple, that the genealogies and histories of the Old Testament, are in no respect sufficient foundations for a chronology from the beginning of time, nor for universal history. But then the same hypotheses will secure the infallibility of scripture-authority as far as religion is concerned. Faith and reason may be reconciled a little better than they commonly are. I may deny that the Old Testament is transmitted to us under all the conditions of an authentic history; and yet be at liberty to maintain that the passages in it which establish original sin, which seem favourable to the doctrine of the Trinity, which foretel the coming of the Messiah, and all others of similar kind, are come down to us as they were originally dictated by the *Holy Ghost*.

In attributing the whole credibility of the Old Testament to the authority of the New, and in limiting the authenticity of the Jewish scriptures to those parts alone that concern law, doctrine, and prophecy, by which their chronology and the far greatest part of their history are excluded,

cluded, I will venture to assure your Lordship that I do not assume so much, as is assumed in every hypothesis that affixes the divine seal of inspiration to the whole canon, that rests the whole proof on Jewish veracity, and that pretends to account particularly and positively for the descent of these ancient writings in their present state.

Another reason, for which I have insisted the rather on the distinction so often mentioned, is this. I think we may find very good foundation for it even in the Bible: and though this be a point very little attended to, and much disguised, it would not be hard to shew, upon great inducements of probability, that the law and the history were far from being blended together as they now stand in the Pentateuch, even from the time of *Moses* down to that of *Esdras*. But the principal and decisive reason for separating in such manner the legal, doctrinal, and prophetical parts, from the historical, is the necessity of having some rule to go by: and, I protest, I know of none that is yet agreed upon. I content myself therefore to fix my opinion concerning the authority of the Old Testament in this manner, and carry it thus far only. We must do so; or we must enter into that labyrinth of dispute and contradiction, wherein even the most orthodox Jews and Christians have wandered so many ages, and still wander. It is strange, but it is true; not only the Jews differ from the Christians, but Jews and Christians both differ among themselves,
con-

concerning almost every point that is necessary to be certainly known and agreed upon, in order to establish the authority of books which both have received already as authentic and sacred. So that whoever takes the pains to read what learned men have writ on this subject, will find that they leave the matter as doubtful as they took it up. Who were the authors of these scriptures; when they were published; how they were composed and preserved; or renewed, to use a remarkable expression of the famous *Huet* in his *Demonstration*; in fine, how they were lost during the captivity, and how they were retrieved after it; are all matters of controversy to this day.

It would be easy for me to descend into a greater detail, and to convince your Lordship of what I have been saying in general, by an induction of particulars, even without any other help than that of a few notes which I took when I applied myself to this examination, and which now lie before me. But such a digression would carry me too far: and I fear that you will think I have said already more than enough upon this part of my subject. I go on therefore to observe to your Lordship, that if the history of the Old Testament was as exact and authentic, as the ignorance and impudence of some Rabbies have made them assert that it is; if we could believe with them, that *Moses* wrote every syllable in the Pentateuch as it now stands, or that all the Psalms were written by *David*; nay, if we could believe, with *Philo* and *Josephus*,
that

that *Moses* wrote the account of his own death and sepulture, and made a sort of a funeral panegyric on himself, as we find them in the last chapter of Deuteronomy; yet still would I venture to assert, that he who expects to find a system of chronology, or a thread of history, or sufficient materials for either, in the books of the Old Testament, expects to find what the authors of these books, whoever they were, never intended. They are extracts of genealogies, not genealogies; extracts of histories, not histories. The Jews themselves allow their genealogies to be very imperfect; and produce examples of omissions and errors in them, which denote sufficiently that these genealogies are extracts, wherein every generation in the course of descent is not mentioned. I have read somewhere, perhaps in the works of St *Jerome*, that this father justifies the opinion of those who think it impossible to fix any certain chronology on that of the Bible: and this opinion will be justified still better, to the understanding of every man that considers how grossly the Jews blunder whenever they meddle with chronology; for this plain reason, Because their scriptures are imperfect in this respect; and because they rely on their oral, to rectify and supply their written, traditions; that is, they rely on traditions compiled long after the canon of their scriptures, but deemed by them of equal antiquity and authority. Thus, for instance, *Daniel* and *Simon* the just, according to them, were members at the same time of the great synagogue which

which began and finished the canon of the Old Testament, under the presidency of *Esdra*s. This *Esdra*s was the prophet *Malachi*. *Darius* the son of *Hystaspes* was *Artaxerxes Longimanus*; he was *Abasuerus*, and he was the same *Darius* whom *Alexander* conquered. This may serve as a sample of Jewish chronology, formed on their scriptures which afford insufficient lights, and on their traditions which afford false lights. We are indeed more correct, and come nearer to the truth, in these instances, perhaps in some others, because we make use of profane chronology to help us. But profane chronology is itself so modern, so precarious, that this help does not reach to the greatest part of that time to which sacred chronology extends; that when it begins to help, it begins to perplex us too; and finally, that even with this help we should not have had so much as the appearance of a complete chronological system: and the same may be said of universal history, if learned men had not proceeded very wisely, on one uniform maxim, from the first ages of Christianity, when a custom of sanctifying profane learning, as well as profane rites, which the Jews had imprudently laid aside, was taken up by the Christians. The maxim I mean is this, that profane authority be admitted without scruple or doubt, whenever it says, or whenever it can be made to say, if not *totidem verbis*, yet *totidem syllabis*, or *totidem literis* at least, or whenever it can be made by any interpretation to mean, what confirms, or supplies in a consistent manner, the

F

holy

holy writ; and that the same authority be rejected, when nothing of this kind can be done, but the contradiction or inconsistency remains irreconcilable. Such a liberty as this would not be allowed in any other case; because it supposes the very thing that is to be proved. But we see it taken, very properly to be sure, in favour of sacred and infallible writings, when they are compared with others.

In order to perceive with the utmost evidence, that the scope and design of the author or authors of the Pentateuch, and of the other books of the Old Testament, answer as little the purpose of antiquaries, in history, as in chronology, it will be sufficient briefly to call to mind the sum of what they relate, from the creation of the world to the establishment of the Persian empire. If the antediluvian world continued one thousand six hundred and fifty-six years, and if the vocation of Abraham is to be placed four hundred and twenty-six years below the deluge, these twenty centuries make almost two thirds of the period mentioned: and the whole history of them is comprised in eleven short chapters of Genesis; which is certainly the most compendious extract that ever was made. If we examine the contents of these chapters, do we find any thing like an universal history, or so much as an abridgment of it? *Adam* and *Eve* were created, they broke the commandment of God, they were driven out of the garden of Eden, one of their sons killed his brother, but their race soon multiplied and peopled

peopled the earth. What geography now have we, what history, of this antediluvian world? Why, none. The sons of God, it is said, lay with the daughters of men, and begot giants; and God drowned all the inhabitants of the earth, except one family. After this we read that the earth was repeopled; but these children of one family were divided into several languages, even whilst they lived together, spoke the same language, and were employed in the same work. Out of one of the countries into which they dispersed themselves, Chaldea, God called *Abraham* some time afterwards, with magnificent promises, and conducted him to a country called Chanaan. Did this author, my Lord, intend an universal history? Certainly not. The tenth chapter of Genesis names indeed some of the generations descending from the sons of *Noah*; some of the cities founded, and some of the countries planted, by them. But what are bare names, naked of circumstances, without descriptions of countries, or relations of events? They furnish matter only for guess and dispute; and even the similitude of them, which is often used as a clue to lead us to the discovery of historical truth, has notoriously contributed to propagate error, and to increase the perplexity of ancient tradition. These imperfect and dark accounts have not furnished matter for guess and dispute alone: but a much worse use has been made of them by Jewish rabbies, Christian fathers, and Mahometan doctors, in their profane extensions of this part of the Mosaic history.

The creation of the first man is described by some, as if, Preadamites, they had assisted at it. They talk of his beauty, as if they had seen him; of his gigantic size, as if they had measured him; and of his prodigious knowledge, as if they had conversed with him. They point out the very spot where *Eve* laid her head the first time he enjoyed her. They have minutes of the whole conversation between this mother of mankind, who damned her children before she bore them, and the serpent. Some are positive that *Cain* quarrelled with *Abel* about a point of doctrine, and others affirm that the dispute arose about a girl. A great deal of such stuff may be easily collected about *Enoch*, about *Noah*, and about the sons of *Noah*; but I wave any farther mention of such impertinencies as *Bonzes* or *Talapains* would almost blush to relate. Upon the whole matter, if we may guess at the design of an author by the contents of his book, the design of *Moses*, or of the author of the history ascribed to him, in this part of it, was, to inform the people of Israel of their descent from *Noah* by *Sem*, and of *Noah's* from *Adam* by *Seth*; to illustrate their original; to establish their claim to the land of Chanaan; and to justify all the cruelties committed by *Joshua* in the conquest of the Chanaanites, in whom, says *Bochart*,
“ the prophecy of *Noah* was completed, when
“ they were subdued by the Israelites, who had
“ been so long slaves to the Egyptians.”

Allow me to make, as I go along, a short reflection or two on this prophecy, and the completion

pletion of it, as they stand recorded in the Pentateuch, out of many that might be made. The terms of the prophecy, then, are not very clear; and the curse pronounced in it, contradicts all our notions of order and of justice. One is tempted to think, that the patriarch was still drunk; and that no man in his senses could hold such language, or pass such a sentence. Certain it is, that no writer but a Jew could impute to the œconomy of Divine Providence, the accomplishment of such a prediction, nor make the Supreme Being the executor of such a curse.

Ham alone offended; *Chanaan* was innocent: for the Hebrew and other doctors, who would make the son an accomplice with his father, affirm it not only without, but against, the express authority of the text. *Chanaan* was, however, alone cursed: and he became, according to his grandfather's prophecy, "a servant of servants," that is, the vilest and worst of slaves (for I take these words in a sense, if not the most natural, the most favourable to the prophecy, and the least absurd) to *Sem*, tho' not to *Japhet*, when the Israelites conquered Palestine; to one of his uncles, not to his brethren. Will it be said---it has been said---that where we read *Chanaan*, we are to understand *Ham*, whose brethren *Sem* and *Japhet* were? At this rate, we shall never know what we read; as these critics never care what they say. Will it be said---this has been said too---that *Ham* was punished in his posterity, when *Chanaan* was cursed, and his descendants were exterminated? But who does not

see that the curse, and the punishment, in this case, fell on *Chanaan* and his posterity, exclusively of the rest of the posterity of *Ham*; and were therefore the curse and punishment of the son, not of the father, properly? The descendants of *Mesraim*, another of his sons, were the Egyptians: and they were so far from being servants of servants to their cousins the Semites, that these were servants of servants to them, during more than fourscore years. Why the posterity of *Chanaan* was to be deemed an accursed race, it is easy to account; and I have mentioned it just now. But it is not so easy to account, why the posterity of the righteous *Sem*, that great example of filial reverence, became slaves to another branch of the family of *Ham*.

It would not be worth while to lengthen this tedious letter, by setting down any more of the contents of the history of the Bible. Your Lordship may please to call the substance of it to your mind; and your native candour and love of truth will oblige you then to confess, that these sacred books do not aim, in any part of them, at any thing like universal chronology and history. They contain a very imperfect account of the Israelites themselves; of their settlement in the land of promise, of which, by the way, they never had entire, and scarce ever peaceable, possession; of their divisions, apostasies, repentances, relapses, triumphs, and defeats, under the occasional government of their judges, and under that of their kings; of the Galilean and Samaritan captivities, into which they were carried

ried by the kings of Assyria; and of that which was brought on the remnant of this people when the kingdom of Judah was destroyed by those princes who governed the empire, founded on the union of Nineveh and Babylon. These things are all related, your Lordship knows, in a very summary and confused manner: and we learn so little of other nations by these accounts, that if we did not borrow some light from the traditions of other nations, we should scarce understand them. One particular observation, and but one, I will make, to shew what knowledge in the history of mankind, and in the computation of time, may be expected from these books. The Assyrians were their neighbours, powerful neighbours, with whom they had much and long to do. Of this empire, therefore, if of any thing, we might hope to find some satisfactory account. What do we find? The scripture takes no notice of any Assyrian kingdom, till just before the time when profane history makes that empire to end. Then we hear of *Phul*, of *Teglath-Phalasser*, who was perhaps the same person; and of *Salmanaser*, who took Samaria in the twelfth of the æra of *Nabonasser*, that is, twelve years after the Assyrian empire was no more. *Sennacherib* succeeds to him, and *Afferbaddon* to *Sennacherib*. What shall we say to this apparent contrariety? if the silence of the Bible creates a strong presumption against the first, may not the silence of profane history create some against the second, Assyrian Monarchy? The pains that are taken to persuade,

that there is room enough between *Sardanapalus* and *Cyrus* for the second, will not resolve the difficulty. Something much more plausible may be said; but even this will be hypothetical, and liable to great contradiction. So that, upon the whole matter, the scriptures are so far from giving us light into general history, that they increase the obscurity even of those parts to which they have the nearest relation. We have, therefore, neither in profane nor in sacred authors, such authentic, clear, distinct, and full accounts of the originals of ancient nations, and of the great events of those ages that are commonly called the first ages, as deserve to go by the name of history, or as afford sufficient materials for chronology and history.

I might now proceed to observe to your Lordship how this has happened, not only by the necessary consequences of human nature, and the ordinary course of human affairs, but by the policy, artifice, corruption, and folly of mankind. But this would be to heap digression upon digression, and to presume too much on your patience. I shall therefore content myself to apply these reflections on the state of ancient history to the study of history, and to the method to be observed in it; as soon as your Lordship has rested yourself a little after reading, and I after writing, so long a letter.

L E T.

L E T T E R IV.

- I. That there is in History sufficient authenticity to render it useful, notwithstanding all objections to the contrary.
- II. Of the Method and due restrictions to be observed in the study of it.

WHETHER the letter I now begin to write will be long or short, I know not: but I find my memory is refreshed, my imagination warmed, and matter flows in so fast upon me, that I have not time to press it close. Since, therefore, you have provoked me to write, you must be content to take what follows.

I have observed already, that we are apt naturally to apply to ourselves what has happened to other men, and that examples take their force from hence; as well those which history, as those which experience, offers to our reflection. What we do not believe to have happened, therefore, we shall not thus apply: and for want of the same application, such examples will not have the same effect. Ancient history, such ancient history as I have described, is quite unfit, therefore, in this respect, to answer the ends that every reasonable man should propose to himself in this study; because such ancient history will never gain sufficient credit with any reasonable man. A tale well told, or a comedy or a tragedy well wrought up, may have a momentary effect upon the mind, by heating the imagination,

gination, surprizing the judgment, and affecting strongly the passions. The Athenians are said to have been transported into a kind of martial phrensy, by the representation of a tragedy of *Æschylus*, and to have marched under this influence from the theatre to the plains of *Marathon*. These momentary impressions might be managed, for aught I know, in such manner as to contribute a little, by frequent repetitions of them, towards maintaining a kind of habitual contempt of folly, detestation of vice, and admiration of virtue, in well-policed commonwealths. But then these impressions cannot be made, nor this little effect be wrought, unless the fables bear an appearance of truth. When they bear this appearance, reason connives at the innocent fraud of imagination; reason dispenses, in favour of probability, with those strict rules of criticism that she has established to try the truth of facts: but, after all, she receives these fables as fables; and as such only she permits imagination to make the most of them. If they pretended to be history, they would be soon subjected to another and more severe examination. What may have happened, is the matter of an ingenious fable; what has happened, is that of an authentic history: the impressions which one or the other makes are in proportion. When imagination grows lawless and wild, rambles out of the precincts of nature, and tells of heroes and giants, fairies and enchanters, of events and of phænomena repugnant to universal experience, to our clearest and
most

most distinct ideas, and to all the known laws of nature, reason does not connive a moment; but, far from receiving such narrations as historical, she rejects them as unworthy to be placed even among the fabulous. Such narrations, therefore, cannot make the slightest momentary impressions on a mind fraught with knowledge, and void of superstition. Imposed by authority, and assisted by artifice, the delusion hardly prevails over common sense; blind ignorance almost sees, and rash superstition hesitates: nothing less than enthusiasm and phrensy can give credit to such histories, or apply such examples. Don *Quixote* believed; but even *Sancho* doubted.

What I have said will not be much controverted by any man who has read *Amadis* of Gaul, or has examined our ancient traditions without prepossession. The truth is, the principal difference between them seems to be this. In *Amadis* of Gaul, we have a thread of absurdities that are invented without any regard to probability, and that lay no claim to belief: ancient traditions are an heap of fables, under which some particular truths, inscrutable, and therefore useless to mankind, may lie concealed; which have a just pretence to nothing more, and yet impose themselves upon us, and become, under the venerable name of ancient history, the foundations of modern fables, the materials with which so many systems of fancy have been erected.

But now, as men are apt to carry their judgments

ments into extremes, there are some that will be ready to insist that all history is fabulous, and that the very best is nothing better than a probable tale, artfully contrived, and plausibly told, wherein truth and falsehood are indistinguishably blended together. All the instances, and all the common-place arguments, that *Bayle* and others have employed to establish this sort of Pyrrhonism, will be quoted: and from thence it will be concluded, that if the pretended histories of the first ages, and of the originals of nations, be too improbable and too ill-vouched to procure any degree of belief, those histories that have been writ later, that carry a greater air of probability, and that boast even cotemporary authority, are at least insufficient to gain that degree of firm belief which is necessary to render the study of them useful to mankind. But here that happens, which often happens: the premises are true, and the conclusion is false; because a general axiom is established precariously on a certain number of partial observations. This matter is of consequence; for it tends to ascertain the degrees of assent that we may give to history.

I agree, then, that history has been purposely and systematically falsified in all ages; and that partiality and prejudice have occasioned both voluntary and involuntary errors even in the best. Let me say without offence, my Lord, since I may say it with truth, and am able to prove it, that ecclesiastical authority has led the way to this corruption in all ages and all religions.

gions. How monstrous were the absurdities that the priesthood imposed on the ignorance and superstition of mankind in the Pagan world, concerning the originals of religions and governments, their institutions and rites, their laws and customs? What opportunities had they for such impositions, whilst the keeping the records and collecting the traditions was in so many nations the peculiar office of this order of men? A custom highly extolled by *Josephus*, but plainly liable to the grossest frauds, and even a temptation to them. If the foundations of Judaism and Christianity have been laid in truth, yet what numberless fables have been invented to raise, to embellish, and to support these structures, according to the interest and taste of the several architects? That the Jews have been guilty of this, will be allowed: and, to the shame of Christians, if not of Christianity, the fathers of one church have no right to throw the first stone at the fathers of the other. Deliberate systematical lying has been practised and encouraged from age to age; and among all the pious frauds that have been employed to maintain a reverence and zeal for their religion in the minds of men, this abuse of history has been one of the principal and most successful: an evident and experimental proof, by the way, of what I have insisted upon so much, the aptitude and natural tendency of history to form our opinions, and to settle our habits. This righteous expedient was in so much use and repute in the Greek church, that one *Metaphrastus* wrote

wrote a treatise on the art of composing holy romances : the fact, if I remember right, is cited by *Baillet* in his book of the lives of the saints. He and other learned men of the Roman church have thought it of service to their cause, since the resurrection of letters, to detect some impostures, and to depose, or to unniche, according to the French expression, now and then a reputed saint ; but they seem in doing this to mean no more than a sort of composition : they give up some fables, that they may defend others with greater advantage ; and they make truth serve as a stalking-horse to error. The same spirit, that prevailed in the Eastern church, prevailed in the Western, and prevails still. A strong proof of it appeared lately in the country where I am. A sudden fury of devotion seized the people of Paris for a little priest *, undistinguished during his life, and dubbed a saint by the Jansenists after his death. Had the first minister been a Jansenist, the saint had been a saint still : all France had kept his festival : and, since there are thousands of eye-witnesses ready to attest the truth of all the miracles supposed to have been wrought at his tomb, notwithstanding the discouragement which these zealots have met with from the government ; we may assure ourselves, that these silly impostures would have been transmitted in all the solemn pomp of history, from the knaves of this age to the fools of the next.

This lying spirit has gone forth from ecclesiastical

* The abbé Paris.

fiastical to other historians: and I might fill many pages with instances of extravagant fables that have been invented in several nations, to celebrate their antiquity, to ennoble their originals, and to make them appear illustrious in the arts of peace and the triumphs of war. When the brain is well heated, and devotion or vanity, the semblance of virtue or real vice, and, above all, disputes and contests, have inspired that complication of passions we term *zeal*, the effects are much the same, and history becomes very often a lying panegyric or a lying satire; for different nations, or different parties in the same nation, belie one another without any respect for truth, as they murder one another without any regard to right or sense of humanity. Religious zeal may boast this horrid advantage over civil zeal, that the effects of it have been more sanguinary, and the malice more unrelenting. In another respect, they are more alike, and keep a nearer proportion: different religions have not been quite so barbarous to one another, as sects of the same religion; and, in like manner, nation has had better quarter from nation, than party from party. But, in all these controversies, men have pushed their rage beyond their own and their adversaries lives: they have endeavoured to interest posterity in their quarrels; and by rendering history subservient to this wicked purpose, they have done their utmost to perpetuate scandal, and to immortalise their animosity. The Heathen taxed the Jews even with idolatry; the Jews joined with the Heathen

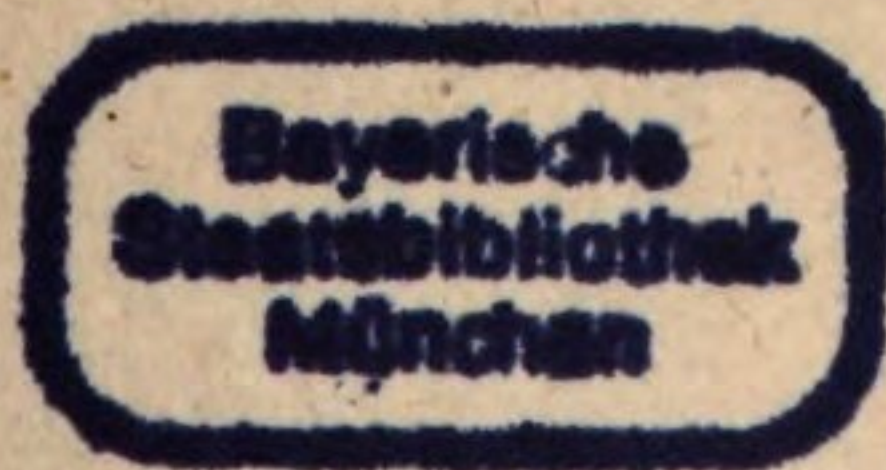
then

then to render Christianity odious; but the church, who beat them at their weapons during these contests, has had this further triumph over them, as well as over the several sects that have arisen within her own pale: The works of those who have writ against her, have been destroyed; and whatever she advanced, to justify herself and to defame her adversaries, is preserved in her annals, and the writings of her doctors.

The charge of corrupting history, in the cause of religion, has been always committed to the most famous champions and greatest saints of each church; and, if I was not more afraid of tiring than of scandalising your Lordship, I could quote to you examples of modern churchmen who have endeavoured to justify foul language by the New Testament, and cruelty by the Old: nay, what is execrable beyond imagination, and what strikes horror into every mind that entertains due sentiments of the Supreme Being, *God* himself has been cited for rallying and insulting *Adam* after his fall. In other cases, this charge belongs to the pedants of every nation, and the tools of every party. What accusations of idolatry and superstition have not been brought and aggravated against the Mahometans? Those wretched Christians who returned from those wars, so improperly called the Holy Wars, rumoured these stories about the West: and you may find, in some of the old chroniclers and romance-writers, as well as poets, the Saracens called Paynims; though
surely

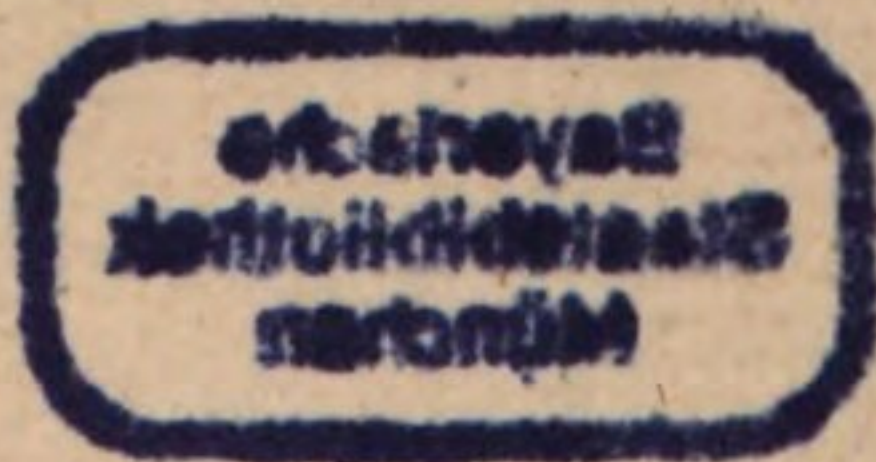
surely they were much further off from any suspicion of Polytheism, than those who called them by that name. When *Mahomet* the second took Constantinople in the fifteenth century, the Mahometans began to be a little better, and but a little better, known, than they had been before, to these parts of the world. But their religion, as well as their customs and manners, was strangely misrepresented by the Greek refugees that fled from the Turks: and the terror and hatred which this people had inspired by the rapidity of their conquests, and by their ferocity, made all these misrepresentations universally pass for truths. Many such instances may be collected from *Maraccio's* refutation of the koran; and *Relandus* has published a very valuable treatise on purpose to refute these calumnies, and to justify the Mahometans. Does not this example incline your Lordship to think, that the Heathens, and the Arians, and other heretics, would not appear quite so absurd in their opinions, nor so abominable in their practice, as the orthodox Christians have represented them; if some *Relandus* could arise, with the materials necessary to their justification in his hands? He who reflects on the circumstances that attended letters, from the time when *Constantine*, instead of uniting the characters of emperor and sovereign pontiff in himself when he became Christian, as they were united in him and all the other emperors in the Pagan system of government, gave so much independent wealth and power to the clergy, and the

G means



means of acquiring so much more : he who carries these reflections on through all the latter empire, and through those ages of ignorance and superstition, wherein it was hard to say which was greatest, the tyranny of the clergy, or the servility of the laity : he who considers the extreme severity, for instance, of the laws made by *Theodosius* in order to stifle every writing that the orthodox clergy, that is, the clergy then in fashion, disliked ; or the character and influence of such a priest as *Gregory*, called the Great, who proclaimed war to all Heathen learning in order to promote Christian verity ; and flattered *Brunebault*, and abetted *Phocas* : he who considers all these things, I say, will not be at a loss to find the reasons, why history, both that which was writ before, and a great part of that which has been writ since, the Christian æra, is come to us so imperfect and so corrupt.

When the imperfection is due to a total want of memorials, either because none were originally written, or because they have been lost by devastations of countries, extirpations of people, and other accidents in a long course of time ; or because zeal, malice, and policy, have joined their endeavours to destroy them purposely ; we must be content to remain in our ignorance, and there is no great harm in that. Secure from being deceived, I can submit to be uninformed. But when there is not a total want of memorials ; when some have been lost or destroyed, and others have been preserved and



and propagated; then we are in danger of being deceived: and therefore he must be very implicit indeed who receives for true the history of any religion or nation, and much more that of any sect or party, without having the means of confronting it with some other history. A reasonable man will not be thus implicit. He will not establish the truth of history on single, but on concurrent, testimony. If there be none such, he will doubt absolutely: if there be a little such, he will proportion his assent or dissent accordingly. A small gleam of light borrowed from foreign anecdotes, serves often to discover a whole system of falsehood: and even they who corrupt history frequently betray themselves by their ignorance or inadvertency. Examples whereof I could easily produce. Upon the whole matter, in all these cases we cannot be deceived essentially, unless we please: and therefore there is no reason to establish Pyrrhonism, that we may avoid the ridicule of credulity.

In all other cases, there is less reason still to do so; for when histories and historical memorials abound, even those that are false serve to the discovery of the truth. Inspired by different passions, and contrived for opposite purposes, they contradict, and contradicting they convict, one another. Criticism separates the ore from the dross, and extracts from various authors a series of true history, which could not have been found entire in any one of them, and will command our assent, when it is formed with

judgment, and represented with candour. If this may be done, as it has been done sometimes, with the help of authors who writ on purpose to deceive; how much more easily, and more effectually, may it be done, with the help of those who paid a greater regard to truth? In a multitude of writers there will be always some, either incapable of gross prevarication from the fear of being discovered, and of acquiring infamy whilst they seek for fame; or else attached to truth upon a nobler and surer principle. It is certain that these, even the last of them, are fallible. Bribed by some passion or other, the former may venture now and then to propagate a falsehood, or to disguise a truth; like the painter that drew in profile, as *Lucian* says, the picture of a prince that had but one eye. *Montagne* objects to the memorials of *Du Bellay*, that though the gross of the facts be truly related, yet these authors turned every thing they mentioned to the advantage of their master, and mentioned nothing which could not be so turned. The old fellow's words are worth quoting. ---“ De contourner le jugement des evenemens
“ souvene contre raison á notre avantage, &
“ d'obmettre tout ce qu'il y a de chatouilleux
“ en la vie de leur maistre, ils en font me-
“ stier.” These, and such as these, deviate occasionally and voluntarily from truth; but even they who are attached to it the most religiously, may slide sometimes into involuntary error. In matters of history, we prefer very justly cotemporary authority; and yet co-
temporary

temporary authors are the most liable to be warped from the straight rule of truth, in writing on subjects which have affected them strongly, “et quorum pars magna fuerunt.” I am so persuaded of this from what I have felt in myself, and observed in others, that if life and health enough fall to my share, and I am able to finish what I meditate, a kind of history, from the late queen’s accession to the throne, to the peace of Utrecht, there will be no materials that I shall examine more scrupulously and severely, than those of the time when the events to be spoken of were in transaction. But though the writers of these two sorts, both of whom pay as much regard to truth as the various infirmities of our nature admit, are fallible; yet this fallibility will not be sufficient to give colour to Pyrrhonism. Where their sincerity as to fact is doubtful, we strike out truth by the confrontation of different accounts; as we strike out sparks of fire by the collision of flints and steel. Where their judgments are suspicious of partiality, we may judge for ourselves; or adopt their judgments, after weighing them with certain grains of allowance. A little natural sagacity will proportion these grains according to the particular circumstances of the authors, or their general characters; for even these influence. Thus *Montagne* pretends, but he exaggerates a little, that *Guicciardin* nowhere ascribes any one action to a virtuous, but every one to a vicious, principle. Something like this has been reproached to *Tacitus*; and,

notwithstanding all the sprightly loose observations of *Montagne* in one of his essays, where he labours to prove the contrary, read *Plutarch's* comparisons in what language you please, I am of *Bodin's* mind, you will perceive that they were made by a Greek. In short, my Lord, the favourable opportunities of corrupting history have been often interrupted, and are now over in so many countries, that truth penetrates even into those where lying continues still to be part of the policy ecclesiastical and civil; or where, to say the best we can say, truth is never suffered to appear, till she has passed through hands, out of which she seldom returns entire and undefiled.

But it is time I should conclude this head, under which I have touched some of those reasons that shew the folly of endeavouring to establish universal Pyrrhonism in matters of history, because there are few histories without some lies, and none without some mistakes; and that prove the body of history which we possess, since ancient memorials have been so critically examined, and modern memorials have been so multiplied, to contain in it such a probable series of events, easily distinguishable from the improbable, as force the assent of every man who is in his senses, and are therefore sufficient to answer all the purposes of the study of history. I might have appealed, perhaps, without entering into the argument at all, to any man of candour, whether his doubts concerning the truth of history have hindered him from applying
ing

ing the examples he has met with in it, and from judging of the present, and sometimes of the future, by the past? whether he has not been touched with reverence and admiration at the virtue and wisdom of some men, and of some ages; and, whether he has not felt indignation and contempt for others? whether *Epaminondas*, or *Phocion*, for instance, the *Decii*, or the *Scipios*, have not raised in his mind a flame of public spirit, and private virtue? and whether he has not shuddered with horror at the proscriptions of *Marius* and *Sylla*, at the treachery of *Theodotus* and *Achillas*, and at the consummate cruelty of an infant king? “*Quis non contra*
“*Marii arma, et contra Syllæ proscriptionem,*
“*concitatur? Quis non Theodoto, et Achillæ, et*
“*ipfi puero, non puerile aucto facinus, infestus*
“*est?*” If all this be a digression, therefore, your Lordship will be so good as to excuse it.

II. What has been said concerning the multiplicity of histories, and of historical memorials wherewith our libraries abound since the resurrection of letters happened, and the art of printing began, puts me in mind of another general rule, that ought to be observed by every man who intends to make a real improvement, and to become wiser as well as better, by the study of history. I hinted at this rule in a former letter, where I said that we should neither grope in the dark, nor wander in the light. History must have a certain degree of probability and authenticity, or the examples we find in it will not carry a force sufficient to make due impres-

sions on our minds, nor to illustrate nor to strengthen the precepts of philosophy and the rules of good policy. But besides, when histories have this necessary authenticity and probability, there is much discernment to be employed in the choice and the use we make of them. Some are to be read, some are to be studied; and some may be neglected entirely, not only without detriment, but with advantage. Some are the proper objects of one man's curiosity, some of another's, and some of all mens'; but all history is not an object of curiosity for any man. He who improperly, wantonly, and absurdly makes it so, indulges a sort of canine appetite: the curiosity of one, like the hunger of the other, devours ravenously and without distinction whatever falls in its way, but neither of them digests. They heap crudity upon crudity, and nourish and improve nothing but their distemper. Some such characters I have known, though it is not the most common extreme into which men are apt to fall. One of them I knew in this country. He joined, to a more than athletic strength of body, a prodigious memory; and to both, a prodigious industry. He had read almost constantly twelve or fourteen hours a-day, for five-and-twenty or thirty years; and had heaped together as much learning as could be crowded into an head. In the course of my acquaintance with him, I consulted him once or twice, not oftener; for I found this mass of learning of as little use to me as to the owner. The man was communicative enough; but nothing was

was distinct in his mind. How could it be otherwise? he had never spared time to think, all was employed in reading. His reason had not the merit of common mechanism. When you press a watch or pull a clock, they answer your question with precision; for they repeat exactly the hour of the day, and tell you neither more nor less than you desire to know. But when you asked this man a question, he overwhelmed you by pouring forth all that the several terms or words of your question recalled to his memory: and if he omitted any thing, it was that very thing to which the sense of the whole question should have led him and confined him. To ask him a question, was to wind up a spring in his memory, that rattled on with vast rapidity and confused noise, till the force of it was spent: and you went away with all the noise in your ears, stunned and uninformed. I never left him, that I was not ready to say to him, “*Dieu vous fasse la grace de devenir moins savant!*” a wish that *La Mothe le Vayer* mentions upon some occasion or other, and that he would have done well to have applied to himself upon many.

He who reads with discernment and choice, will acquire less learning, but more knowledge: and as this knowledge is collected with design, and cultivated with art and method, it will be at all times of immediate and ready use to himself and others:

Thus useful arms in magazines we place,
All rang'd in order, and dispos'd with grace:

Nor

Nor thus alone the curious eye to please;
But to be found, when need requires, with ease.

You remember the verses, my Lord, in our friend's Essay on Criticism, which was the work of his childhood almost; but is such a monument of good sense and poetry, as no other that I know has raised in his riper years.

He who reads without this discernment and choice; and, like Bodin's pupil, resolves to read all; will not have time, no, nor capacity neither, to do any thing else. He will not be able to think, without which it is impertinent to read; nor to act, without which it is impertinent to think. He will assemble materials with much pains, and purchase them at much expence; and have neither leisure nor skill to frame them into proper scantlings, or to prepare them for use. To what purpose should he husband his time, or learn architecture? he has no design to build. But then to what purpose all these quarries of stone, all these mountains of sand and lime, all these forests of oak and deal? "*Magno impendio temporum, magna alienarum aurium molestia, laudatio hæc constat, O hominem literatum! Simus hoc titulo rusticiore contenti, O virum bonum!*" We may add, and *Seneca* might have added in his own style, and according to the manners and characters of his own age, another title as rustic, and as little in fashion: "*O virum sapientia sua simplicem, et simplicitate sua sapientem! O virum utilem sibi, suis, reipublicæ, et humano generi!*" I have said perhaps already, but no matter, it cannot

cannot be repeated too often, that the drift of all philosophy, and of all political speculations, ought to be the making us better men and better citizens. Those studies, which have no intention towards improving our moral characters, have no pretence to be styled philosophical. “*Quis est enim,*” says *Tully* in his *Offices*, “*qui nullis officii præceptis tradendis, philosophum se audeat dicere?*” Whatever political speculations, instead of preparing us to be useful to society and to promote the happiness of mankind, are only systems for gratifying private ambition, and promoting private interests, at the public expence; all such, I say, deserve to be burnt, and the authors of them to starve, like *Machiavel*, in a jail.

LETTER V.

- I. The great use of History, properly so called, as distinguished from the writings of mere annalists and antiquaries.
- II. Greek and Roman historians.
- III. Some idea of a Complete History.
- IV. Further cautions to be observed in this study, and the regulation of it according to the different professions and situations of men: above all, the use to be made of it, (1) by divines, and (2) by those who are called to the service of their country.

I REMEMBER my last letter ended abruptly,
and

and a long interval has since passed: so that the thread I had then spun has slipped from me. I will try to recover it, and to pursue the task your Lordship has obliged me to continue. Besides the pleasure of obeying your orders, it is likewise of some advantage to myself, to recollect my thoughts, and resume a study in which I was conversant formerly. For nothing can be more true than that saying of *Solon* reported by *Plato*, though censured by him, impertinently enough, in one of his wild books of laws---“*Asfidue addiscens, ad senium venio.*” The truth is, the most knowing man in the course of the longest life will have always much to learn, and the wisest and best much to improve. This rule will hold in the knowledge and improvement to be acquired by the study of history: and, therefore, even he who has gone to this school in his youth, should not neglect it in his age. “I read in *Livy*,” says *Montagne*, “what another man does not; and *Plutarch* read there what I do not.” Just so, the same man may read at fifty, what he did not read, in the same book, at five-and-twenty: at least I have found it so, by my own experience, on many occasions.

By comparing, in this study, the experience of other men and other ages with our own, we improve both: we analyse, as it were, philosophy. We reduce all the abstract speculations of ethics, and all the general rules of human policy, to their first principles. With these advantages, every man may, though few men do, advance

vance daily towards those ideas, those increated essences a Platonist would say, which no human creature can reach in practice, but in the nearest approaches to which the perfection of our nature consists; because every approach of this kind renders a man better, and wiser for himself, for his family, for the little community of his own country, and for the great community of the world. Be not surpris'd, my Lord, at the order in which I place these objects. Whatever order divines and moralists, who contemplate the duties belonging to these objects, may place them in, this is the order they hold in nature: and I have always thought that we might lead ourselves and others to private virtue, more effectually by a due observation of this order, than by any of those sublime refinements that pervert it.

Self-love but serves the virtuous mind to wake;
As the small pebble stirs the peaceful lake.
The centre mov'd, a circle strait succeeds;
Another still, and still another spreads:
Friend, parent, neighbour, first it will embrace,
His country next, and next all human race.

So sings our friend *Pope*, my Lord; and so I believe. So I shall prove too, if I mistake not, in an epistle I am about to write to him, in order to complete a set that were writ some years ago.

A man of my age, who returns to the study of history, has no time to lose, because he has little to live: a man of your Lordship's age has no time to lose, because he has much to do. For different reasons, therefore, the same rules will
suit

suit us. Neither of us must grope in the dark, neither of us must wander in the light. I have done the first formerly a good deal; “ne verba
“mihi darentur; ne aliquid esse, in hac recon-
“dita antiquitatis scientia, magni ac secreti bo-
“ni judicaremus.” If you take my word, you will throw none of your time away in the same manner: and I shall have the less regret for that which I have mispent, if I persuade you to hasten down from the broken traditions of antiquity, to the more entire as well as more authentic histories of ages more modern. In the study of these we shall find many a complete series of events, preceded by a deduction of their immediate and remote causes, related in their full extent, and accompanied with such a detail of circumstances and characters, as may transport the attentive reader back to the very time, make him a party to the councils, and an actor in the whole scene of affairs. Such draughts as these, either found in history, or extracted by our own application from it, and such alone, are truly useful. Thus history becomes what she ought to be, and what she has been sometimes called, *magistra vitæ*, the mistress, like philosophy, of human life. If she is not this, she is at best *nuntia vetustatis*, the gazette of antiquity, or a dry register of useless anecdotes. *Suetonius* says, that *Tiberius* used to inquire of the grammarians, “quæ mater Hecubæ? quod
“Achillis nomen inter virgines fuisset? quid
“Syrenes cantare sint solitæ?” *Seneca* mentions certain Greek authors, who examined very accurately,

curately, whether *Anacreon* loved wine or women best; whether *Sappho* was a common whore; with other points of equal importance: and I make no doubt but that a man, better acquainted than I have the honour to be with the learned persons of our own country, might find some who have discovered several anecdotes concerning the giant *Albion*, concerning *Samothes* the son of *Brito* the grandson of *Japhet*, and concerning *Brutus*, who led a colony into our island after the siege of Troy, as the others repeopled it after the deluge. But ten millions of such anecdotes as these, though they were true; and complete authentic volumes of Egyptian or Chaldean, of Greek or Latin, of Gallic or British, of French or Saxon records; would be of no value in my sense, because of no use towards our improvement in wisdom and virtue; if they contained nothing more than dynasties and genealogies, and a bare mention of remarkable events in the order of time, like journals, chronological tables, or dry and meagre annals.

I say the same of all those modern compositions, in which we find rather the heads of history, than any thing that deserves to be called history. Their authors are either abridgers or compilers. The first do neither honour to themselves nor good to mankind; for surely the abridger is in a form below the translator: and the book, at least the history, that wants to be abridged, does not deserve to be read. They have done anciently a great deal of hurt by substituting

stituting many a bad book in the place of a good one; and by giving occasion to men, who contented themselves with extracts and abridgments, to neglect, and through their neglect to lose, the invaluable originals: for which reason I curse *Constantine Porphyrogenetes* as heartily as I do *Gregory*. The second are of some use, as far as they contribute to preserve public acts, and dates, and the memory of great events. But they who are thus employed, have seldom the means of knowing those private passages on which all public transactions depend, and as seldom the skill and the talents necessary to put what they do know well together: they cannot see the working of the mine, but their industry collects the matter that is thrown out. It is the business, or it should be so, of others to separate the pure ore from the dross, to stamp it into coin, and to enrich not encumber mankind. When there are none sufficient to this task, there may be antiquaries, and there may be journalists or annalists; but there are no historians.

It is worth while to observe the progress that the Romans and the Greeks made towards history. The Romans had journalists or annalists from the very beginning of their state. In the sixth century, or very near it at soonest, they began to have antiquaries; and some attempts were made towards writing of history. I call the first historical productions, attempts only, or essays; and they were no more, neither among the Romans nor among the Greeks. “*Græci*
“*ipsi sic initio scriptitarunt ut noster Cato, ut*
“*Pictor,*

“*Pictor*, ut *Piso*.” It is *Antony*, not the triumvir, my Lord, but his grandfather the famous orator, who says this in the second book of *Tully* De Oratore: he adds afterwards, “Itaque qualis apud Græcos *Pherecydes*, *Hellanicus*, *Acusilaus*, aliique permulti, talis noster *Cato*, et *Pictor*, et *Piso*.” I know that *Antony* speaks here strictly of defect of style and want of oratory. They were “tantummodo narratores, non exornatores,” as he expresses himself: but as they wanted style and skill to write in such a manner as might answer all the ends of history, so they wanted materials. *Pherecydes* writ something about *Iphigenia*, and the festivals of *Bacchus*; *Hellanicus* was a poetical historian; and *Acusilaus* graved genealogies on plates of brass. *Pictor*, who is called by *Livy* “*scriptorum antiquissimus*,” published, I think, some short annals of his own time. Neither he nor *Piso* could have sufficient materials for the history of Rome; nor *Cato*, I presume, even for the antiquities of Italy. The Romans, with the other people of that country, were then just rising out of barbarity, and growing acquainted with letters; for those that the Grecian colonies might bring into Sicily and the southern parts of Italy, spread little, or lasted little, and made in the whole no figure. And whatever learning might have flourished among the ancient Etrurians, which was perhaps at most nothing better than augury, and divination, and superstitious rites, which were admired and cultivated in ignorant ages, even that was almost worn out

H of

of memory. Pedants, who would impose all the traditions of the four first ages of Rome for authentic history, have insisted much on certain annals, of which mention is made in the very place I have now quoted. “Ab initio rerum
“Romanarum,” says the same interlocutor,
“usque ad *P. Mucium* pontificem maximum,
“res omnes singulorum annorum mandabat li-
“teris pontifex maximus, efferebatque in al-
“bum, et proponebat tabulam domi, potestas
“ut esset populo cognoscendi; iidemque etiam
“nunc annales maximi nominantur.” But, my Lord, be pleased to take notice, that the very distinction I make, is made here between a bare annalist and an historian: “erat historia nihil
“aliud,” in these early days, “nisi annalium
“confectio.” Take notice likewise, by the way, that *Livy*, whose particular application it had been to search into this matter, affirms positively that the greatest part of all public and private monuments, among which he specifies these very annals, had been destroyed in the sack of Rome by the Gauls: and *Plutarch* cites *Clodius* for the same assertion, in the life of *Numa Pompilius*. Take notice, in the last place, of that which is more immediately to our present purpose. These annals could contain nothing more than short minutes or memorandums, hung up in a table at the pontiff’s house, like the rules of the game in a billiard-room; and much such history as we have in the epitomes prefixed to the books of *Livy* or of any other historian, in lapidary inscriptions, or in some modern almanacks.

nacks. Materials for history they were, no doubt; but scanty and insufficient: such as those ages could produce, when writing and reading were accomplishments so uncommon, that the prætor was directed by law, *clavum pangere*, to drive a nail into the door of a temple, that the number of years might be reckoned by the number of nails: such, in short, as we have in monkish annalists, and other ancient chroniclers of nations now in being; but not such as can entitle the authors of them to be called historians, nor can enable others to write history in that fulness in which it must be written to become a lesson of ethics and politics. The truth is, nations, like men, have their infancy; and the few passages of that time, which they retain, are not such as deserved most to be remembered; but such as, being most proportioned to that age, made the strongest impressions on their minds. In those nations that preserve their dominion long and grow up to manhood, the elegant as well as the necessary arts and sciences are improved to some degree of perfection: and history, that was at first intended only to record the names, or perhaps the general characters of some famous men, and to transmit in gross the remarkable events of every age to posterity, is raised to answer another and a nobler end.

II. Thus it happened among the Greeks; but much more among the Romans, notwithstanding the prejudices in favour of the former even among the latter. I have sometimes thought, that *Virgil* might have justly ascribed to

his countrymen the praise of writing history better, as well as that of affording the noblest subjects for it, in those famous verses *, where the different excellencies of the two nations are so finely touched: but he would have weakened perhaps by lengthening, and have flattened the climax. Open *Herodotus*; you are entertained by an agreeable story-teller, who meant to entertain, and nothing more. Read *Thucydides* or *Xenophon*: you are taught indeed as well as entertained; and the statesman or the general, the philosopher or the orator, speaks to you in every page. They wrote on subjects on which they were well informed, and they treated them fully: they maintained the dignity of history; and thought it beneath them to vamp up old traditions, like the writers of their age and country, and to be the trumpeters of a lying antiquity. The *Cyropædia* of *Xenophon* may be objected, perhaps: but if he gave it for a romance, not an history, as he might for aught we can tell, it is out of the case; and if he gave it for an history, not a romance, I should prefer his authority to that of *Herodotus* or any other of his countrymen. But however this might be, and whatever merit we may justly ascribe to these two writers, who were almost single

* Excudent alii spirantia mollius æra,
Credo equidem: vivos ducent de marmore vultus;
Orabunt causas melius; cœlique meatus
Describent radio, et surgentia sidera dicent:
Tu regere imperio populos, Romane, memento:
Hæ tibi erunt artes; pacisque imponere morem,
Parcere subiectis, et debellare superbos.

single in their kind, and who treated but small portions of history; certain it is in general, that the levity as well as loquacity of the Greeks made them incapable of keeping up to the true standard of history; and even *Polybius* and *Dionysius* of Halicarnassus must bow to the great Roman authors. Many principal men of that commonwealth wrote memorials of their own actions and times: *Sylla*, *Cæsar*, *Labiænus*, *Pollio*, *Augustus*, and others. What writers of memorials, what compilers of the *materia historica*, were these! What genius was necessary to finish up the pictures that such masters had sketched! Rome afforded men that were equal to the task. Let the remains, the precious remains, of *Sallust*, of *Livy*, and of *Tacitus*, witness this truth. When *Tacitus* wrote, even the appearances of virtue had been long proscribed, and taste was grown corrupt as well as manners. Yet history preserved her integrity, and her lustre. She preserved them in the writings of some whom *Tacitus* mentions, in none perhaps more than his own; every line of which out-weighs whole pages of such a rhetor as *Famianus Strada*. I single him out among the moderns, because he had the foolish presumption to censure *Tacitus*, and to write history himself; and your Lordship will forgive this short excursion in honour of a favourite author.

What a school of private and public virtue had been opened to us at the resurrection of learning, if the latter historians of the commonwealth, and the first of the succeeding monarchy,

had come down to us entire? The few that are come down, though broken and imperfect, compose the best body of history that we have; nay, the only body of ancient history that deserves to be an object of study. It fails us indeed most at that remarkable and fatal period, where our reasonable curiosity is raised the highest. *Livy* employed five-and forty books to bring his history down to the end of the sixth century, and the breaking out of the third Punic war: but he employed ninety-five to bring it down from thence to the death of *Drusus*; that is, through the course of one hundred and twenty or thirty years. *Apian*, *Dion Cassius*, and others, nay, even *Plutarch* included, make us but poor amends for what is lost of *Livy*. Among all the adventitious helps by which we endeavour to supply this loss in some degree, the best are those that we find scattered up and down in the works of *Tully*. His Orations particularly, and his Letters, contain many curious anecdotes and instructive reflections, concerning the intrigues and machinations that were carried on against liberty, from *Cataline's* conspiracy to *Cæsar's*. The state of the government, the constitution and temper of the several parties, and the characters of the principal persons who figured at that time on the public stage, are to be seen there in a stronger and truer light than they would have appeared perhaps if he had writ purposely on this subject, and even in those memorials which he somewhere promises *Atticus* to write: “Excudam aliquod Heraclidum o-
pus,

“pus, quod lateat in thesauris tuis.” He would hardly have unmasked in such a work, as freely as in familiar occasional letters, *Pompey*, *Cato*, *Brutus*, nay, himself; the four men of Rome, on whose praises he dwelt with the greatest complacency. The age in which *Livy* flourished, abounded with such materials as these: they were fresh, they were authentic; it was easy to procure them, it was safe to employ them. How he did employ them in executing the second part of his design, we may judge by his execution of the first: and I own to your Lordship, I should be glad to exchange, if it were possible, what we have of this history for what we have not. Would you not be glad, my Lord, to see, in one stupendous draught, the whole progress of that government from liberty to servitude? the whole series of causes and effects, apparent and real, public and private? those which all men saw, and all good men lamented and opposed at the time; and those which were so disguised to the prejudices, to the partialities of a divided people, and even to the corruption of mankind, that many did not, and that many could pretend they did not, discern them, till it was too late to resist them? I am sorry to say it, this part of the Roman story would be not only more curious and more authentic than the former, but of more immediate and more important application to the present state of Britain. But it is lost: the loss is irreparable, and your Lordship will not blame me for deploring it.

III. They who set up for scepticism may not

regret the loss of such an history : but this I will be bold to assert to them, that an history must be writ on this plan, and must aim at least at these perfections, or it will answer sufficiently none of the intentions of history. That it will not answer sufficiently the intention I have insisted upon in these letters, that of instructing posterity by the example of former ages, is manifest : and I think it is as manifest, that an history cannot be said even to relate faithfully and inform us truly, that does not relate fully and inform us of all that is necessary to make a true judgment concerning the matters contained in it. Naked facts, without the causes that produced them and the circumstances that accompanied them, are not sufficient to characterise actions or counsels. The nice degrees of wisdom and of folly, of virtue and of vice, will not only be undiscoverable in them ; but we must be very often unable to determine under which of these characters they fall in general. The sceptics I am speaking of are therefore guilty of this absurdity : the nearer an history comes to the true idea of history, the better it informs and the more it instructs us, the more worthy to be rejected it appears to them. I have said and allowed enough to content any reasonable man about the uncertainty of history. I have owned that the best are defective ; and I will add in this place an observation which did not, I think, occur to me before. Conjecture is not always distinguished, perhaps, as it ought to be ; so that an ingenious writer may sometimes do
very

very innocently, what a malicious writer does very criminally as often as he dares, and as his malice requires it; he may account for events after they have happened, by a system of causes and conduct that did not really produce them, though it might possibly or even probably have produced them. But this observation, like several others, becomes a reason for examining and comparing authorities; and for preferring some, not for rejecting all. *Davila*, a noble historian surely, and one whom I should not scruple to confess equal in many respects to *Livy*, as I should not scruple to prefer his countryman *Guicciardin* to *Thucydides* in every respect; *Davila*, my Lord, was accused, from the first publication of his history, or at least was suspected, of too much refinement and subtilty, in developing the secret motives of actions, in laying the causes of events too deep, and deducing them often through a series of progression too complicated and too artfully wrought. But yet the suspicious person who should reject this historian upon such general inducements as these, would have no grace to oppose his suspicions to the authority of the first duke of *Epernon*, who had been an actor, and a principal actor too, in many of the scenes that *Davila* recites. *Girard*, secretary to this duke, and no contemptible biographer, relates, that this history came down to the place where the old man resided in Gascony, a little before his death; that he read it to him; that the duke confirmed the truth of the narrations in it, and seemed only

ly surprised by what means the author could be so well informed of the most secret councils and measures of those times.

IV. I have said enough on this head ; and your Lordship may be induced perhaps, by what I have said, to think with me, that such histories as these, whether ancient or modern, deserve alone to be studied. Let us leave the credulous learned to write history without materials, or to study those who do so ; to wrangle about ancient traditions, and to ring different changes on the same set of bells. Let us leave the sceptics, in modern as well as ancient history, to triumph in the notable discovery of the ides of one month mistaken for the kalends of another, or in the various dates and contradictory circumstances which they find in weekly gazettes and monthly mercuries. Whilst they are thus employed, your Lordship and I will proceed, if you please, to consider more closely than we have yet done, the rule mentioned above ; that, I mean, of using discernment and choice in the study of the most authentic history ; that of not wandering in the light, which is as necessary as that of not groping in the dark.

Man is the subject of every history ; and to know him well, we must see him and consider him, as history alone can present him to us, in every age, in every country, in every state, in life and in death. History, therefore, of all kinds, of civilized and uncivilized, of ancient and modern nations, in short all history that de-

descends to a sufficient detail of human actions and characters, is useful to bring us acquainted with our species, nay with ourselves. To teach and to inculcate the general principles of virtue, and the general rules of wisdom and good policy which result from such details of actions and characters, comes for the most part, and always should come, expressly and directly into the design of those who are capable of giving such details: and therefore, whilst they narrate as historians, they hint often as philosophers; they put into our hands, as it were, on every proper occasion, the end of a clue, that serves to remind us of searching, and to guide us in the search of that truth which the example before us either establishes or illustrates. If a writer neglects this part, we are able however to supply his neglect by our own attention and industry: and when he gives us a good history of Peruvians or Mexicans, of Chinese or Tartars, of Muscovites or Negroes, we may blame him, but we must blame ourselves much more, if we do not make it a good lesson of philosophy. This being the general use of history, it is not to be neglected. Every one may make it, who is able to read, and to reflect on what he reads: and every one who makes it will find, in his degree, the benefit that arises from an early acquaintance contracted in this manner with mankind. We are not only passengers or sojourners in this world, but we are absolute strangers at the first steps we make in it. Our guides are often ignorant, often unfaithful. By
this

this map of the country, which history spreads before us, we may learn, if we please, to guide ourselves. In our journey through it, we are beset on every side. We are besieged sometimes even in our strongest holds. Terrors and temptations, conducted by the passions of other men, assault us ; and our own passions, that correspond with these, betray us. History is a collection of the journals of those who have travelled through the same country, and been exposed to the same accidents : and their good and their ill success are equally instructive. In this pursuit of knowledge, an immense field is opened to us : general histories, sacred and profane ; the histories of particular countries, particular events, particular orders, particular men ; memorials, anecdotes, travels. But we must not ramble in this field without discernment or choice, nor even with these must we ramble too long.

As to the choice of authors, who have writ on all these various subjects, so much has been said by learned men concerning all those that deserve attention, and their several characters are so well established, that it would be a sort of pedantic affectation to lead your Lordship thro' so voluminous, and at the same time so easy, a detail. I pass it over therefore, in order to observe, that as soon as we have taken this general view of mankind, and of the course of human affairs in different ages and different parts of the world, we ought to apply, and, the shortness of human life considered, to confine ourselves

selves almost entirely, in our study of history, to such histories as have an immediate relation to our professions, or to our rank and situation in the society to which we belong. Let me instance in the profession of divinity, as the noblest and the most important.

(1.) I have said so much concerning the share which divines of all religions have taken in the corruption of history, that I should have anathemas pronounced against me, no doubt, in the east and the west, by the dairo, the mufti, and the pope, if these letters were submitted to ecclesiastical censure; for surely, my Lord, the clergy have a better title than the sons of Apollo, to be called "*genus irritabile vatum*." What would it be, if I went about to shew, how many of the Christian clergy abuse, by misrepresentation and false quotation, the history they can no longer corrupt? And yet this task would not be even to me an hard one. But as I mean to speak, in this place, of Christian divines alone; so I mean to speak of such of them particularly as may be called divines without any sneer; of such of them, for some such I think there are, as believe themselves, and would have mankind believe; not for temporal but spiritual interest, not for the sake of the clergy but for the sake of mankind. Now it has been long matter of astonishment to me, how such persons as these could take so much silly pains to establish mystery on metaphysics, revelation on philosophy, and matters of fact on abstract reasoning? A religion founded on the authority

ty of a divine mission, confirmed by prophecies and miracles, appeals to facts : and the facts must be proved as all other facts that pass for authentic are proved ; for faith, so reasonable after this proof, is absurd before it. If they are thus proved, the religion will prevail without the assistance of so much profound reasoning : if they are not thus proved, the authority of it will sink in the world even with this assistance. The divines object in their disputes with atheists, and they object very justly, that these men require improper proofs, proofs that are not suited to the nature of the subject, and then cavil that such proofs are not furnished. But what then do they mean, to fall into the same absurdity themselves in their disputes with Theists, and to demand improper proofs in ears that are open to proper proofs ? The matter is of great moment, my Lord ; and I make no excuse for the zeal which obliges me to dwell a little on it. A serious and honest application to the study of ecclesiastical history, and every part of profane history and chronology relative to it, is incumbent on such reverend persons as are here spoken of, on a double account : because history alone can furnish the proper proofs, that the religion they teach is of God ; and because the unfair manner, in which these proofs have been and are daily furnished, creates prejudices, and gives advantages against Christianity that require to be removed. No scholar will dare to deny, that false history, as well as sham miracles, has been employed to propagate Christianity formerly :

merly : and whoever examines the writers of our own age, will find the same abuse of history continued. Many and many instances of this abuse might be produced. It is grown into custom ; writers copy one another ; and the mistake that was committed, or the falsehood that was invented by one, is adopted by hundreds.

Abbadie says in his famous book, that the gospel of *St Matthew* is cited by *Clemens* bishop of Rome, a disciple of the Apostles ; that *Barnabas* cites it in his epistle ; that *Ignatius* and *Polycarpe* receive it ; and that the same fathers, that give testimony for *Matthew*, give it likewise for *Mark*. Nay, your Lordship will find, I believe, that the present bishop of London, in his third pastoral letter, speaks to the same effect. I will not trouble you nor myself with any more instances of the same kind. Let this, which occurred to me as I was writing, suffice. It may well suffice ; for I presume the fact advanced by the minister and the bishop, is a mistake. If the fathers of the first century do mention some passages that are agreeable to what we read in our Evangelists, will it follow that these fathers had the same gospels before them ? To say so, is a manifest abuse of history, and quite inexcusable in writers that knew, or should have known, that these fathers made use of other gospels, wherein such passages might be contained, or they might be preserved in unwritten tradition. Besides which, I could almost venture to affirm, that these fathers of the first century do not expressly name the gospels we
have

have of *Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John*. To the two reasons that have been given why those who make divinity their profession should study history, particularly ecclesiastical history, with an honest and serious application, in order to support Christianity against the attacks of unbelievers, and to remove the doubts and prejudices that the unfair proceedings of men of their own order have raised in minds candid but not implicit, willing to be informed but curious to examine; to these, I say, we may add another consideration that seems to me of no small importance. Writers of the Roman religion have attempted to shew, that the text of the holy writ is on many accounts insufficient to be the sole criterion of orthodoxy: I apprehend, too, that they have shewn it. Sure I am that experience, from the first promulgation of Christianity to this hour, shews abundantly with how much ease and success the most opposite, the most extravagant, nay, the most impious opinions, and the most contradictory faiths, may be founded on the same text, and plausibly defended by the same authority. Writers of the reformed religion have erected their batteries against tradition; and the only difficulty they had to encounter in this enterprise, lay in levelling and pointing their cannon so as to avoid demolishing in one common ruin, the traditions they retain, and those they reject. Each side has been employed to weaken the cause, and explode the system, of his adversary: and, whilst they have been so employed, they have jointly laid their axes

immense labours of the Christian divines in several communions have made them appear to be; Christianity may lean on the civil and ecclesiastical power, and be supported by the forcible influence of education; but the proper force of religion, that force which subdues the mind and awes the conscience by conviction, will be wanting.

I had reason, therefore, to produce divinity, as one instance of those professions that require a particular application to the study of some particular parts of history; and since I have said so much on the subject in my zeal for Christianity, I will add this further. The resurrection of letters was a fatal period; the Christian system has been attacked, and wounded too, very severely, since that time. The defence has been better made, indeed, by modern divines, than it had been by ancient fathers and apologists. The moderns have invented new methods of defence, and have abandoned some posts that were not tenable: but still there are others, in defending which, they lie under great disadvantages. Such are various facts, piously believed in former times; but on which the truth of Christianity has been rested very imprudently in more enlightened ages; because the falsity of some and the gross improbability of others are so evident, that, instead of answering the purpose for which they were invented, they have rendered the whole tenor of ecclesiastical history and tradition precarious, ever since a strict but just application of the rules of criticism has been made to them. I touch

touch these things lightly; but if your Lordship reflects upon them, you will find reason, perhaps, to think as I do, that it is high time the clergy in all Christian communions should join their forces, and establish those historical facts, which are the foundations of the whole system, on clear and unquestionable historical authority, such as they require in all cases of moment from others; reject candidly what cannot be thus established; and pursue their inquiries in the same spirit of truth through all the ages of the church; without any regard to historians, fathers, or councils, more than they are strictly entitled to on the face of what they have transmitted to us on their own consistency, and on the concurrence of other authority. Our pastors would be thus, I presume, much better employed than they generally are. Those of the clergy who make religion merely a trade, who regard nothing more than the subsistence it affords them, or, in higher life, the wealth and power they enjoy by the means of it, may say to themselves, that it will last their time, or that policy and reasons of state will preserve the form of a church when the spirit of religion is extinct. But those whom I mentioned above; those who act for spiritual, not temporal ends; and are desirous that men should believe and practise the doctrines of Christianity, as well as go to church and pay tithes; will feel and own the weight of such considerations as these; and agree, that however the people have been, and may be still, amused, yet Christianity has been in decay ever

since the resurrection of letters; and that it cannot be supported as it was supported before that æra, nor by any other way than that which I propose, and which a due application to the study of history, chronology, and criticism, would enable our divines to pursue, no doubt, with success.

I might instance, in other professions, the obligation men lie under of applying themselves to certain parts of history, and I can hardly forbear doing it in that of the Law; in its nature, the noblest and most beneficial to mankind; in its abuse and debasement, the most fordid and the most pernicious. A lawyer now is nothing more, I speak of ninety-nine in an hundred at least, to use some of *Tully's* words, “ nisi legum, leius quidam cautus, et acutus præco actionum, cantor formularum, auceps syllabarum.” But there have been lawyers that were orators, philosophers, historians: there have been *Bacons* and *Clarendons*, my Lord. There will be none such any more, till, in some better age, true ambition or the love of fame prevails over avarice; and till men find leisure and encouragement to prepare themselves for the exercise of this profession, by climbing up to the *vantage ground*, so my lord *Bacon* calls it, of science; instead of grovelling all their lives below, in a mean, but gainful application to all the little arts of chicanery. Till this happen, the profession of the law will scarce deserve to be ranked among the learned professions: and whenever it happens, one of the vantage grounds, to which

which men must climb, is metaphysical, and the other historical, knowledge. They must pry into the secret recesses of the human heart, and become well acquainted with the whole moral world, that they may discover the abstract reason of all laws; and they must trace the laws of particular states, especially of their own, from the first rough sketches to the more perfect draughts; from the first causes or occasions that produced them, through all the effects, good and bad, that they produced. But I am running insensibly into a subject, which would detain me too long from one that relates more immediately to your Lordship, and with which I intend to conclude this long letter.

(2) I pass from the consideration of those professions to which particular parts or kinds of history seem to belong: and I come to speak of the study of history, as a necessary mean to prepare men for the discharge of that duty which they owe to their country, and which is common to all the members of every society that is constituted according to the rules of right reason, and with a due regard to the common good. I have met in St *Real's* works, or some other French book, with a ridicule cast on private men who make history a political study, or who apply themselves in any manner to affairs of state. But the reflection is too general. In governments so arbitrary by their constitution, that the will of the prince is not only the supreme but the sole law, it is so far from being a duty, that it may be dangerous, and must be im-

I 3

pertinent,

pertinent, in men who are not called by the prince to the administration of public affairs, to concern themselves about it, or to fit themselves for it. The sole vocation there is the favour of the court: and whatever designation God makes by the talents he bestows, though it may serve, which it seldom ever does, to direct the choice of the prince; yet I presume that it cannot become a reason to particular men, or create a duty on them, to devote themselves to the public service. Look on the Turkish government. See a fellow taken from rowing in a common passage-boat, by the caprice of the prince: see him invested next day with all the power the soldans took under the caliphs, or the mayors of the palace under the successors of *Clovis*: see a whole empire governed by the ignorance, inexperience, and arbitrary will, of this tyrant, and a few other subordinate tyrants as ignorant and unexperienced as himself. In France, indeed, though an absolute government, things go a little better. Arts and sciences are encouraged, and here and there an example may be found of a man who has risen by some extraordinary talents, amidst innumerable examples of men who have arrived at the greatest honours and highest posts by no other merit than that of assiduous fawning attendances, or of skill in some despicable puerile amusement; in training wasps, for instance, to take regular flights like hawks, and stoop at flies. The nobility of France, like the children of tribute among the ancient Saracens and modern Turks, are set apart for wars. They are

are bred to make love, to hunt, and to fight: and, if any of them should acquire knowledge superior to this, they would acquire that which might be prejudicial to themselves, but could not become beneficial to their country. The affairs of state are trusted to other hands. Some have risen to them by drudging long in business: some have been made ministers almost in the cradle: and the whole power of the government has been abandoned to others in the dotage of life. There is a monarchy, an absolute monarchy too, I mean that of China, wherein the administration of the government is carried on, under the direction of the prince, ever since the dominion of the Tartars has been established, by several classes of Mandarins, and according to the deliberation and advice of several orders of councils: the admission to which classes and orders, depends on the abilities of the candidates, as their rise in them depends on the behaviour they hold, and the improvements they make afterwards. Under such a government, it is neither impertinent nor ridiculous, in any of the subjects who are invited by their circumstances, or pushed to it by their talents, to make the history of their own and of other countries a political study, and to fit themselves by this and all other ways for the service of the public. It is not dangerous neither; or an honour, that outweighs the danger, attends it; since private men have a right by the ancient constitution of this government, as well as councils of state, to represent to the prince the abuses of his administration.

tion. But still men have not there the same occasion to concern themselves in the affairs of the state, as the nature of a free government gives to the members of it. In our own country, for in our own the forms of a free government at least are hitherto preserved, men are not only designed for the public service by the circumstances of their situation, and their talents, all which may happen in others: but they are designed to it by their birth in many cases; and in all cases they may dedicate themselves to this service, and take, in different degrees, some share in it, whether they are called to it by the prince or no. In absolute governments, all public service is to the prince, and he nominates all those that serve the public. In free governments, there is a distinct and a principal service due to the state. Even the king, of such a limited monarchy as ours, is but the first servant of the people. Among his subjects, some are appointed by the constitution, and others are elected by the people, to carry on the exercise of the legislative power jointly with him, and to controul the executive power independently on him. Thus, your Lordship is born a member of that order of men, in whom a third part of the supreme power of the government resides: and your right to the exercise of the power belonging to this order not being yet opened, you are chosen into another body of men, who have different power and a different constitution, but who possess another third part of the supreme legislative authority, for as long a time as the
com-

commission or trust delegated to them by the people lasts. Free-men, who are neither born to the first, nor elected to the last, have a right however to complain, to represent, to petition, and, I add, even to do more in cases of the utmost extremity. For sure there cannot be a greater absurdity, than to affirm, that the people have a remedy in resistance, when their prince attempts to enslave them; but that they have none, when their representatives sell themselves and them.

The sum of what I have been saying is, that, in free governments, the public service is not confined to those whom the prince appoints to different posts in the administration under him; that there the care of the state is the care of multitudes; that many are called to it in a particular manner by their rank, and by other circumstances of their situation;---and that even those whom the prince appoints are not only answerable to him; but, like him, and before him, to the nation, for their behaviour in their several posts. It can never be impertinent nor ridiculous therefore in such a country, whatever it might be in the abbot of *St Real's*, which was Savoy I think; or in Peru, under the Incas, where, *Garcilasso de la Vega* says, it was lawful for none but the nobility to study---for men of all degrees to instruct themselves in those affairs wherein they may be actors, or judges of those that act, or controulers of those that judge. On the contrary, it is incumbent on every man to instruct himself, as well as the means

means and opportunities he has permit, concerning the nature and interests of the governments, and those rights and duties that belong to him, or to his superiors, or to his inferiors. This in general ; but in particular, it is certain, that the obligations under which we lie to serve our country increase, in proportion to the ranks we hold, and the other circumstances of birth, fortune, and that situation that call us to this service ; and, above all, to the talents which God has given us to perform it.

It is in this view that I shall address to your Lordship whatever I have further to say on the study of history.

L E T T E R VI.

From what period Modern History is peculiarly useful to the service of our country, *viz.*

From the end of the fifteenth century to the present.

The division of this into three particular periods :

In order to a sketch of the history and state of Europe from that time.

SINCE then you are, my Lord, by your birth, by the nature of our government, and by the talents God has given you, attached for life to the service of your country ; since genius alone cannot enable you to go through this service

vice with honour to yourself and advantage to your country, whether you support or whether you oppose the administrations that arise; since a great stock of knowledge, acquired betimes and continually improved, is necessary to this end; and since one part of this stock must be collected from the study of history, as the other part is to be gained by observation and experience; I come now to speak to your Lordship of such history as has an immediate relation to the great duty and business of your life, and of the method to be observed in this study. The notes I have by me, which were of some little use thus far, serve me no farther, and I have no books to consult. No matter; I shall be able to explain my thoughts without their assistance, and less liable to be tedious. I hope to be as full and as exact on memory alone, as the manner in which I shall treat the subject requires me to be.

I say then, that, however closely affairs are linked together in the progression of governments, and how much soever events that follow are dependent on those that precede, the whole connexion diminishes to sight as the chain lengthens; till at last it seems to be broken, and the links that are continued from that point bear no proportion nor any similitude to the former. I would not be understood to speak only of those great changes that are wrought by a concurrence of extraordinary events; for instance, the expulsion of one nation, the destruction of one government, and the establishment
of

of another: but even of those that are wrought in the same governments and among the same people, slowly and almost imperceptibly, by the necessary effects of time, and flux condition of human affairs. When such changes as these happen in several states about the same time, and consequently affect other states by their vicinity, and by many different relations which they frequently bear to one another; then is one of those periods formed, at which the chain spoken of is so broken as to have little or no real or visible connexion with that which we see continue. A new situation, different from the former, begets new interests in the same proportion of difference; not in this or that particular state alone, but in all those that are concerned by vicinity or other relations, as I said just now, in one general system of policy. New interests beget new maxims of government, and new methods of conduct. These, in their turns, beget new manners, new habits, new customs. The longer this new constitution of affairs continues, the more will this difference increase: and although some analogy may remain long between what preceded and what succeeded such a period, yet will this analogy soon become an object of mere curiosity, not of profitable enquiry. Such a period therefore is, in the true sense of the words, an epocha or an æra, a point of time at which you stop, or from which you reckon forward. I say forward; because we are not to study in the present case, as chronologers compute, backward. Should we persist
to

to carry our researches much higher, and to push them even to some other period of the same kind, we should misemploy our time; the causes then laid having spent themselves, the series of effects derived from them being over, and our concern in both consequently at an end. But a new system of causes and effects, that subsists in our time, and whereof our conduct is to be a part, arising at the last period; and all that passes in our time being dependent on what has passed since that period, or being immediately relative to it; we are extremely concerned to be well informed about all those passages. To be entirely ignorant about the ages that precede this æra, would be shameful. Nay, some indulgence may be had to a temperate curiosity in the review of them. But to be learned about them, is a ridiculous affectation in any man who means to be useful to the present age. Down to this æra, let us read history: from this æra, and down to our own time, let us study it.

The end of the fifteenth century seems to be just such a period as I have been describing, for those who live in the eighteenth, and who inhabit the western parts of Europe. A little before, or a little after, this point of time, all those events happened, and all those revolutions began, that have produced so vast a change in the manners, customs, and interests of particular nations, and in the whole policy, ecclesiastical and civil, of these parts of the world. I must descend here into some detail, not of histories, collections, or memorials; for all these are well enough

enough known; and though the contents are in the heads of few, the books are in the hands of many. But, instead of shewing your Lordship where to look, I shall contribute more to your entertainment and instruction, by marking out, as well as my memory will serve me to do it, what you are to look for, and by furnishing a kind of clue to your studies. I shall give, according to custom, the first place to religion.

A view of the Ecclesiastical Government of Europe from the beginning of the sixteenth century.

OBSERVE then, my Lord, that the demolition of the papal throne was not attempted with success till the beginning of the sixteenth century. If you are curious to cast your eyes back, you will find *Berenger* in the eleventh, who was soon silenced; *Arnoldus* in the same, who was soon hanged; *Valdo* in the twelfth, and our *Wickliff* in the fourteenth, as well as others perhaps whom I do not recollect. Sometimes the doctrines of the church were alone attacked; and sometimes the doctrine, the discipline, and the usurpations of the Pope. But little fires, kindled in corners of a dark world, were soon stifled by that great abettor of Christian unity, the hangman. When they spired and blazed out, as in the case of the Albigeois and of the Hussites, armies were raised to extinguish them by torrents of blood; and such saints as *Dominic*, with the crucifix in their hands, instigated the troops

troops to the utmost barbarity. Your Lordship will find that the church of Rome was maintained by such charitable and salutary means, among others, till the period spoken of: and you will be curious, I am sure, to inquire how this period came to be more fatal to her than any former conjuncture. A multitude of circumstances, which you will easily trace in the histories of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, to go no farther back, concurred to bring about this great event; and a multitude of others as easy to be traced, concurred to hinder the demolition from becoming total, and to prop the tottering fabric. Among these circumstances, there is one less complicated and more obvious than others, which was of principal and universal influence. The art of printing had been invented about forty or fifty years before the period we fix: from that time, the resurrection of letters hastened on a-pace; and at this period they had made great progress, and were cultivated with great application. *Mahomet II.* drove them out of the east into the west; and the Popes proved worse politicians than the Mufties in this respect. *Nicholas V.* encouraged learning and learned men; *Sixtus IV.* was, if I mistake not, a great collector of books at least; and *Leo X.* was the patron of every art and science. The magicians themselves broke the charm by which they had bound mankind for so many ages: and the adventure of that knight-errant, who, thinking himself happy in the arms of a celestial nymph, found that he

was

was the miserable slave of an infernal hag, was in some sort renewed. As soon as the means of acquiring and spreading information grew common, it is no wonder that a system was unravelled, which could not have been woven with success in any ages but those of gross ignorance and credulous superstition. I might point out to your Lordship many other immediate causes; some general, like this that I have mentioned; and some particular. The great schism, for instance, that ended in the beginning of the fifteenth century, and in the council of Constance, had occasioned prodigious scandal. Two or three vicars of *Christ*, two or three infallible heads of the church, roaming about the world at a time, furnished matter of ridicule as well as scandal: and whilst they appealed, for so they did in effect, to the laity, and reproached and excommunicated one another, they taught the world what to think of the institution as well as exercise of the papal authority. The same lesson was taught by the council of Pisa that preceded, and by that of Basle that followed, the council of Constance. The horrid crimes of *Alexander VI.* the lawcy ambition of *Julius II.* the immense profusion and scandalous exactions of *Leo X.* all these events and characters, following in a continued series from the beginning of one century, prepared the way for the revolution that happened in the beginning of the next. The state of Germany, the state of England, and that of the North, were particular causes, in these several

veral countries, of this revolution. Such were many remarkable events that happened about the same time, and a little before it, in these and in other nations; and such were likewise the characters of many of the princes of that age, some of whom favoured the reformation, like the elector of Saxony, on a principle of conscience; and most of whom favoured it, just as others opposed it, on a principle of interest. This your Lordship will discover manifestly to have been the case; and the sole difference you will find between *Henry VIII.* and *Francis I.* one of whom separated from the Pope, as the other adhered to him, is this: *Henry VIII.* divided, with the secular clergy and his people, the spoil of the Pope, and his satellites the monks; *Francis I.* divided, with the Pope, the spoil of his clergy, secular and regular, and of his people. With the same impartial eye that your Lordship surveys the abuses of religion, and the corruptions of the church as well as court of Rome, which brought on the reformation at this period; you will observe the characters and conduct of those who began, who propagated, and who favoured the reformation: and from your observation of these, as well as of the unsystematical manner in which it was carried on at same time in various places, and of the want of concert, nay even of charity, among the reformers, you will learn what to think of the several religions that unite in their opposition to the Roman, and yet hate one another most heartily; what to think of the several sects that have sprout-

K

ed,

ed, like suckers, from the same great roots; and what the true principles are of Protestant ecclesiastical policy. This policy had no being till *Luther* made his establishment in Germany; till *Zwinglius* began another in Swisserland, which *Calvin* carried on, and, like *Americus Vesputius* who followed *Christopher Columbus*, robbed the first adventurer of his honour; and till the reformation in our country was perfected under *Edward VI.* and *Elizabeth*. Even Popish ecclesiastical policy is no longer the same since that æra. His Holiness is no longer at the head of the whole western church: and to keep the part that adheres to him, he is obliged to loosen their chains, and to lighten his yoke. The spirit and pretensions of his court are the same, but not the power. He governs by expedient and management more, and by authority less. His decrees and his briefs are in danger of being refused, explained away, or evaded, unless he negociates their acceptance before he gives them, governs in concert with his flock, and feeds his sheep according to their humour and interest. In short, his excommunications, that made the greatest emperors tremble, are despised by the lowest members of his own communion; and the remaining attachment to him has been, from this æra, rather a political expedient to preserve an appearance of unity, than a principle of conscience; whatever some bigotted princes may have thought, whatever ambitious prelates and hireling scribblers may have taught, and whatever a people worked up to en-

enthusiasm by fanatical preachers may have acted. Proofs of this would be easy to draw, not only from the conduct of such princes as *Ferdinand I.* and *Maximilian II.* who could scarce be esteemed Papists though they continued in the Pope's communion; but even from that of princes who persecuted their Protestant subjects with great violence. Enough has been said, I think, to shew your Lordship how little need there is of going up higher than the beginning of the sixteenth century in the study of history, to acquire all the knowledge necessary at this time in ecclesiastical policy, or in civil policy as far as it is relative to this. Historical monuments of this sort are in every man's hand, the facts are sufficiently verified, and the entire scenes lie open to our observation: even that scene of solemn refined banter exhibited in the council of Trent, imposes on no man who reads *Paolo*, as well as *Pallavicini*, and the letters of *Vargas*.

A view of the Civil Government of Europe in the beginning of the sixteenth century.

I. IN FRANCE.

A VERY little higher need we go, to observe those great changes in the civil constitutions of the principal nations of Europe, in the partition of power among them, and by consequence in the whole system of European policy, which

have operated so strongly for more than two centuries, and which operate still. I will not affront the memory of our *Henry VII.* so much as to compare him to *Lewis XI.* and yet I perceive some resemblance between them; which would perhaps appear greater, if *Philip of Commines* had wrote the History of *Henry* as well as that of *Lewis*; or, if my lord *Bacon* had wrote that of *Lewis* as well as that of *Henry*. This prince came to the crown of England a little before the close of the fifteenth century; and *Lewis* began his reign in France about twenty years sooner. These reigns make remarkable periods in the histories of both nations. To reduce the power, privileges, and possessions, of the nobility, and to increase the wealth and authority of the crown, was the principal object of both. In this their success was so great, that the constitutions of the two governments have had since that time more resemblance in name and in form, than in reality, to the constitutions that prevailed before. *Lewis XI.* was the first, say the French, “qui mit les rois hors de page.” The independency of the nobility had rendered the state of his predecessors very dependent, and their power precarious. They were the sovereigns of great vassals; but these vassals were so powerful, that one of them was sometimes able, and two or three of them always, to give law to the sovereign. Before *Lewis* came to the crown, the English had been driven out of their possessions in France, by the poor character of *Henry VI.* the domestic troubles of his reign, and the de-

defection of the house of Burgundy from his alliance, much more than by the ability of *Charles VII.* who seems to have been neither a greater hero nor a greater politician than *Henry VI.* and even than by the vigour and union of the French nobility in his service. After *Lewis* came to the crown, *Edward IV.* made a shew of carrying the war again into France: but he soon returned home; and your Lordship will not be at a loss to find much better reasons for his doing so, in the situation of his affairs and the characters of his allies, than those which *Philip of Commines* draws from the artifice of *Lewis*, from his good cheer, and his pensions. Now from this time our pretensions on France were in effect given up: and *Charles* the Bold, the last prince of the house of Burgundy, being killed, *Lewis* had no vassal able to molest him. He reunited the dutchy of Burgundy and Artois to his crown, he acquired Provence by gift, and his son Britany by marriage: and thus France grew, in the course of a few years, into that great and compact body which we behold at this time. The history of France before this period, is, like that of Germany, a complicated history of several states and several interests; sometimes concurring like members of the same monarchy, and sometimes warring on one another. Since this period, the history of France is the history of one state under a more uniform and orderly government; the history of a monarchy wherein the prince is possessor of some, as well as lord of all the great fiefs: and, the

authority of many tyrants centering in one, tho' the people are not become more free, yet the whole system of domestic policy is entirely changed. Peace at home is better secured, and the nation grown fitter to carry war abroad. The governors of great provinces and of strong fortresses have opposed their king, and taken arms against his authority and commission since that time: but yet there is no more resemblance between the authority and pretensions of these governors, or the nature and occasions of these disputes, and the authority and pretensions of the vassals of the crown in former days, or the nature and occasions of their disputes with the prince and with one another, than there is between the ancient and the present peers of France. In a word, the constitution is so altered, that any knowledge we can acquire about it, in the history that precedes this period, will serve to little purpose in our study of the history that follows it, and to less purpose still in assisting us to judge of what passes in the present age. The kings of France since that time, more masters at home, have been able to exert themselves more abroad: and they began to do so immediately; for *Charles VIII.* son and successor of *Lewis XI.* formed great designs of foreign conquests, though they were disappointed by his inability, by the levity of the nation, and by other causes. *Lewis XII.* and *Francis I.* but especially *Francis*, meddled deep in the affairs of Europe: and though the superior genius of *Ferdinand* called the Catholic, and the star of

Charles

Charles V. prevailed against them, yet the efforts they made, shew sufficiently how the strength and importance of this monarchy were increased in their time. From whence we may date likewise the rivalship of the house of France, for we may reckon that of Valois and that of Bourbon as one upon this occasion, and the house of Austria; that continues at this day, and that has cost so much blood and so much treasure in the course of it.

II. IN ENGLAND.

THOUGH the power and influence of the nobility sunk in the great change that began under *Henry VII.* in England, as they did in that which began under *Lewis XI.* in France; yet the new constitutions that these changes produced were very different. In France, the lords alone lost, the king alone gained; the clergy held their possessions and their immunities, and the people remained in a state of mitigated slavery. But in England, the people gained as well as the crown. The commons had already a share in the legislature; so that the power and influence of the lords being broke by *Henry VII.* and the property of the commons increasing by the sale that his son made of church-lands, the power of the latter increased of course by this change in a constitution, the forms whereof were favourable to them. The Union of the Roses put an end to the civil wars of *York* and *Lancaster*, that had succeeded those we commonly call the Barons

wars, and the humour of warring in France, that had lasted near four hundred years under the Normans and Plantagenets, for plunder as well as conquest, was spent. Our temple of *Janus* was shut by *Henry VII.* We neither laid waste our own nor other countries any longer: and wise laws and a wise government changed insensibly the manners, and gave a new turn to the spirit, of our people. We were no longer the free-booters we had been. Our nation maintained her reputation in arms whenever the public interest or the public authority required it; but war ceased to be, what it had been, our principal and almost our sole profession. The arts of peace prevailed among us. We became husbandmen, manufacturers, and merchants, and we emulated neighbouring nations in literature. It is from this time that we ought to study the history of our country, my Lord, with the utmost application. We are not much concerned to know with critical accuracy what were the ancient forms of our parliaments, concerning which, however, there is little room for dispute from the reign of *Henry III.* at least; nor, in short, the whole system of our civil constitution before *Henry VII.* and of our ecclesiastical constitution before *Henry VIII.* But he who has not studied and acquired a thorough knowledge of them both, from these periods down to the present time, in all the variety of events by which they have been affected, will be very unfit to judge or to take care of either. Just as little are we concerned to know, in any nice detail, what

what the conduct of our princes, relatively to their neighbours on the continent, was before this period, and at a time when the partition of power and a multitude of other circumstances rendered the whole political system of Europe so vastly different from that which has existed since. But he who has not traced this conduct from the period we fix, down to the present age, wants a principal part of the knowledge that every English minister of state should have. Ignorance in the respects here spoken of, is the less pardonable, because we have more and more authentic means of information concerning this, than concerning any other period. Anecdotes enow to glut the curiosity of some persons, and to silence all the captious cavils of others, will never be furnished by any portion of history; nor indeed can they, according to the nature and course of human affairs: but he who is content to read and observe like a senator and a statesman, will find in our own and in foreign historians, as much information as he wants concerning the affairs of our island, her fortune at home, and her conduct abroad, from the fifteenth century to the eighteenth. I refer to foreign historians, as well as to our own, for this series of our own history; not only because it is reasonable to see in what manner the historians of other countries have related the transactions wherein we have been concerned, and what judgment they have made of our conduct, domestic and foreign; but for another reason likewise. Our nation has furnished as ample and as important matter,
good

good and bad, for history, as any nation under the sun: and yet we must yield the palm in writing history most certainly to the Italians and to the French; and, I fear, even to the Germans. The only two pieces of history we have, in any respect to be compared with the ancient, are, the reign of *Henry VII.* by my lord *Bacon*, and the history of our Civil War in the last century by your noble ancestor my lord chancellor *Clarendon*. But we have no general history to be compared with some of other countries: neither have we, which I lament much more, particular histories, except the two I have mentioned; nor writers of memorials, nor collectors of monuments and anecdotes, to vie in number or in merit with those that foreign nations can boast; from *Commines*, *Guicciardin*, *Du Bellay*, *Paolo*, *Davila*, *Thuanus*, and a multitude of others, down through the whole period that I propose to your Lordship. But although this be true, to our shame; yet it is true likewise, that we want no necessary means of information. They lie open to our industry and our discernment. Foreign writers are, for the most part, scarce worth reading when they speak of our domestic affairs; nor are our English writers for the most part of greater value when they speak of foreign affairs. In this mutual defect, the writers of other countries are, I think, more excusable than ours: for the nature of our government, the political principles in which we are bred, our distinct interests as islanders, and the complicated various interests and humours of our parties; all these are so peculiar

liar

liar to ourselves, and so different from the notions, manners, and habits of other nations, that it is not wonderful they should be puzzled, or should fall into error, when they undertake to give relations of events that result from all these, or to pass any judgment upon them. But as these historians are mutually defective, so they mutually supply each other's defects. We must compare them therefore, make use of our discernment, and draw our conclusions from both. If we proceed in this manner, we have an ample fund of history in our power, from whence to collect sufficient authentic information; and we must proceed in this manner, even with our own historians of different religions, sects, and parties; or run the risque of being misled by domestic ignorance and prejudice in this case, as well as by foreign ignorance and prejudice in the other.

III. In SPAIN and the Empire.

SPAIN figured little in Europe till the latter part of the fifteenth century; till Castile and Arragon were united by the marriage of *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, till the total expulsion of the Moors, and till the discovery of the West-Indies. After this, not only Spain took a new form, and grew into immense power; but the heir of *Ferdinand* and *Isabella* being heir likewise of the houses of Burgundy and Austria, such an extent of dominion accrued to him by all these successions, and such an addition of rank

rank and authority by his election to the empire, as no prince had been master of in Europe from the days of *Charles* the Great. It is proper to observe here how the policy of the Germans altered in the choice of an emperor, because the effects of this alteration have been great. When *Rodolphus* of Hapsburg was chose in the year one thousand two hundred and seventy, or about that time, the poverty and the low estate of this prince, who had been marshal of the court to a king of Bohemia, was an inducement to elect him. The disorderly and lawless state of the empire made the princes of it in those days unwilling to have a more powerful head. But a contrary maxim took place at this æra: *Charles V.* and *Francis I.* the two most powerful princes of Europe, were the sole candidates; for the elector of Saxony, who is said to have declined, was rather unable to stand in competition with them: and *Charles* was chosen by the unanimous suffrages of the electoral college, if I mistake not. Another *Charles*, *Charles IV.* who was made emperor illegally enough on the deposition of *Lewis* of Bavaria, and about one hundred and fifty years before, seems to me to have contributed doubly to establish this maxim; by the wise constitutions that he procured to pass, that united the empire in a more orderly form and better system of government; and by alienating the imperial revenues to such a degree, that they were no longer sufficient to support an emperor who had not great revenues of his own. The same maxim

maxim and other circumstances have concurred to keep the empire in this family ever since, as it had been often before; and this family having large dominions in the empire, and larger pretensions as well as dominions out of it, the other states of Europe, France, Spain, and England particularly, have been more concerned since this period in the affairs of Germany, than they were before it; and by consequence the history of Germany, from the beginning of the sixteenth century, is of importance, and a necessary part of that knowledge which your Lordship desires to acquire.

The Dutch commonwealth was not formed till near a century later. But as soon as it was formed, nay even whilst it was forming, these provinces, that were lost to observation among the many that composed the dominions of Burgundy and Austria, became so considerable a part of the political system of Europe, that their history must be studied by every man who would inform himself of this system.

Soon after this state had taken being, others of a more ancient original began to mingle in those disputes and wars, those councils, negotiations, and treaties, that are to be the principal objects of your Lordship's application in the study of history. That of the northern crowns deserves your attention little, before the last century. Till the election of *Frederick I.* to the crown of Denmark, and till that wonderful revolution which the first *Gustavus* brought about in Sweden, it is nothing more than a confused rhapsody

rhapsody of events, in which the great kingdoms and states of Europe neither had any concern, nor took any part. From the time I have mentioned, the northern crowns have turned their counsels and their arms often southwards, and Sweden particularly, with prodigious effect.

To what purpose should I trouble your Lordship with the mention of histories of other nations? they are either such as have no relation to the knowledge you would acquire, like that of the Poles, the Muscovites, or the Turks; or they are such as, having an occasional or a secondary relation to it, fall of course into your scheme; like the history of Italy, for instance, which is sometimes a part of that of France, sometimes of that of Spain, and sometimes of that of Germany. The thread of history, that you are to keep, is that of the nations who are and must always be concerned in the same scenes of action with your own. These are the principal nations of the west. Things that have no immediate relation to your own country, or to them, are either too remote or too minute to employ much of your time; and their history and your own is, for all your purposes, the whole history of Europe.

The two great powers, that of France and that of Austria, being formed, and a rivalship established by consequence between them; it began to be the interest of their neighbours to oppose the strongest and most enterprising of the two, and to be the ally and friend of the weakest.

From

From hence arose the notion of a balance of power in Europe, on the equal poize of which the safety and tranquillity of all must depend. To destroy the equality of this balance has been the aim of each of these rivals in his turn : and to hinder it from being destroyed, by preventing too much power from falling into one scale, has been the principle of all the wise councils of Europe, relative to France and to the House of Austria, thro' the whole period that began at the æra we have fixed, and subsists at this hour. To make a careful and just observation, therefore, of the rise and decline of these powers, in the two last centuries and in the present; of the projects which their ambition formed; of the means they employed to carry these projects on with success; of the means employed by others to defeat them; of the issue of all these endeavours in war and in negotiation; and particularly, to bring your observations home to your own country and your own use, of the conduct that England held, to her honour or dishonour, to her advantage or disadvantage, in every one of the numerous and important conjunctures that happened---ought to be the principal subject of your Lordship's attention in reading and reflecting on this part of modern history.

Now, to this purpose, you will find it of great use, my Lord, when you have a general plan of the history in your mind, to go over the whole again in another method; which I propose to be this. Divide the entire period into such particular periods as the general course of affairs will
mark

mark out to you sufficiently, by the rise of new conjunctures, of different schemes of conduct, and of different theatres of action. Examine this period of history as you would examine a tragedy or a comedy; that is, take first the idea or a general notion of the whole, and after that examine every act and every scene apart. Consider them in themselves, and consider them relatively to one another. Read this history as you would that of any ancient period; but study it afterwards, as it would not be worth your while to study the other; nay, as you could not have in your power the means of studying the other, if the study was really worth your while. The former part of this period abounds in great historians; and the latter part is so modern, that even tradition is authentic enough to supply the want of good history, if we are curious to inquire, and if we hearken to the living with the same impartiality and freedom of judgment as we read the dead: and he that does one will do the other. The whole period abounds in memorials, in collections of public acts and monuments, of private letters, and of treaties. All these must come into your plan of study, my Lord; many not to be read through, but all to be consulted and compared. They must not lead you, I think, to your inquiries, but your enquiries must lead you to them. By joining history and that which we call the *materia historica* together in this manner, and by drawing your information from both, your Lordship will acquire not only that knowledge which many
have

have in some degree, of the great transactions that have passed and the great events that have happened in Europe during this period, and of their immediate and obvious causes and consequences; but your Lordship will acquire a much superior knowledge, and such a one as very few men possess almost in any degree, a knowledge of the true political system of Europe during this time. You will see it in its primitive principles, in the constitutions of governments, the situations of countries, their national and true interests, the characters and religion of the people, and other permanent circumstances. You will trace it through all its fluctuations, and observe how the objects vary seldom, but the means perpetually, according to the different characters of princes, and of those who govern; the different abilities of those who serve; the course accidents, and a multitude of other irregular and contingent circumstances.

The particular periods into which the whole period should be divided, in my opinion, are these. 1. From the fifteenth to the end of the sixteenth century. 2. From thence to the Pyrenean Treaty. 3. From thence down to the present time.

Your Lordship will find this division as apt and as proper, relatively to the particular histories of England, France, Spain, and Germany, the principal nations concerned, as it is relatively to the general history of Europe.

The death of Queen *Elisabeth*, and the accession of King *James I.* made a vast alteration in
L the

the government of our nation at home, and in her conduct abroad, about the end of the first of these periods. The wars that religion occasioned and ambition fomented in France, thro' the reigns of *Francis II.* *Charles IX.* *Henry III.* and a part of *Henry IV.* ended; and the furies of the league were crushed by this great prince, about the same time. *Philip II.* of Spain marks this period likewise by his death, and by the exhausted condition in which he left the monarchy he governed; which took the lead no longer in disturbing the peace of mankind, but acted a second part in abetting the bigotry and ambition of *Ferdinand II.* and *III.* The thirty years wars that devastated Germany did not begin till the eighteenth year of the seventeenth century; but the seeds of it were sowing some time before, and even at the end of the sixteenth. *Ferdinand I.* and *Maximilian* had shewn much lenity and moderation in the disputes and troubles that arose on account of religion. Under *Rodolphus* and *Matthias*, as the succession of their cousin *Ferdinand* approached, the fires that were covered began to smoke and to sparkle; and if the war did not begin with this century, the preparation for it and the expectation of it did.

The second period ends in one thousand six hundred and sixty, the year of the restoration of *Charles II.* to the throne of England; when our civil wars, and all the disorders which *Cromwell's* usurpation had produced, were over; and therefore a remarkable point of time, with respect

spect to our country. It is no less remarkable with respect to Germany, Spain, and France.

As to Germany; the ambitious projects of the German branch of Austria had been entirely defeated, the peace of the empire had been restored, and almost a new constitution formed, or an old one revived, by the treaties of Westphalia; nay, the imperial eagle was not only fallen, but her wings were clipped.

As to Spain; the Spanish branch was fallen as low twelve years afterwards, that is, in the year one thousand six hundred and sixty. *Philip II.* left his successors a ruined monarchy. He left them something worse; he left them his example and his principles of government, founded in ambition, in pride, in ignorance, in bigotry, and all the pedantry of state. I have read somewhere or other, that the war of the Low Countries alone cost him, by his own confession, five hundred and sixty-four millions; a prodigious sum, in what species soever he reckoned. *Philip III.* and *Philip IV.* followed his example and his principles of government at home and abroad. At home, there was much form, but no good order, no œconomy nor wisdom of policy in the state. The church continued to devour the state, and that monster the inquisition to dispeople the country, even more than perpetual war, and all the numerous colonies that Spain had sent to the West-Indies: for your Lordship will find, that *Philip III.* drove more than nine hundred thousand Moriscoes out of his dominions by one edict, with such circum-

stances of inhumanity in the execution of it, as Spaniards alone could exercise, and that tribunal who had provoked this unhappy race to revolt could alone approve. Abroad, the conduct of these princes was directed by the same wild spirit of ambition: rash in undertaking tho' slow to execute, and obstinate in pursuing tho' unable to succeed, they opened a new sluice to let out the little life and vigour that remained in their monarchy. *Philip II.* is said to have been piqued against his uncle *Ferdinand*, for refusing to yield the empire to him on the abdication of *Charles V.* Certain it is, that as much as he loved to disturb the peace of mankind, and to meddle in every quarrel that had the appearance of supporting the Roman and oppressing every other church, he meddled little in the affairs of Germany. But, *Ferdinand* and *Maximilian* dead, and the offspring of *Maximilian* extinct, the kings of Spain espoused the interest of the other branch of their family, entertained remote views of ambition in favour of their own branch even on that side, and made all the enterprises of *Ferdinand* of Gratz, both before and after his elevation to the empire, the common cause of the house of Austria. What compleated their ruin was this; they knew not how to lose, nor when to yield. They acknowledged the independency of the Dutch commonwealth, and became the allies of their ancient subjects at the treaty of Munster: but they would not forego their usurped claim on Portugal, and they persisted to carry on singly the war

war against France. Thus they were reduced to such a lowness of power as can hardly be paralleled in any other case: and *Philip IV.* was obliged at last to conclude a peace, on terms repugnant to his inclination, to that of his people, to the interest of Spain, and to that of all Europe, in the Pyrenean treaty.

As to France; this æra of the entire fall of the Spanish power, is likewise that from which we may reckon that France grew as formidable, as we have seen her, to her neighbours, in power and pretensions. *Henry IV.* meditated great designs, and prepared to act a great part in Europe in the very beginning of this period, when *Ravaillac* stabbed him. His designs died with him, and are rather guessed at than known; for surely those which his historian *Perefixe* and the compiler of *Sully's* memorials ascribe to him, of a Christian commonwealth, divided into fifteen states, and of a senate to decide all differences, and to maintain this new constitution of Europe, are too chimerical to have been really his: but his general design of abasing the house of Austria, and establishing the superior power in that of Bourbon, was taken up, about twenty years after his death, by *Richlieu*, and was pursued by him and by *Mazarin* with so much ability and success, that it was effected entirely by the treaties of Westphalia and by the Pyrenean treaty; that is, at the end of the second of those periods I have presumed to propose to your Lordship.

When the third, in which we now are, will

end, and what circumstances will mark the end of it, I know not: but this I know, that the great events and revolutions, which have happened in the course of it, interest us still more nearly than those of the two precedent periods. I intended to have drawn up an elenchus or summary of the three; but I doubted, on further reflection, whether my memory would enable me to do it with exactness enough: and I saw, that, if I was able to do it, the deduction would be immeasurably long. Something of this kind, however, it may be reasonable to attempt, in speaking of the last period: which may hereafter occasion a further trouble to your Lordship.

But to give you some breathing-time, I will postpone it at present; and am, in the meanwhile,

My LORD,

Your, &c.

LETTER VII.

A Sketch of the State and History of Europe from the Pyrenean treaty in one thousand six hundred and fifty-nine, to the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight.

THE first observation I shall make on this third period of modern history is, that as the

the ambition of *Charles V.* who united the whole formidable power of Austria in himself, and the restless temper, the cruelty, and bigotry of *Philip II.* were principally objects of the attention and solicitude of the councils of Europe, in the first of these periods; and as the ambition of *Ferdinand II.* and *III.* who aimed at nothing less than extirpating the Protestant interest, and under that pretence subduing the liberties of Germany, were objects of the same kind in the second: so an opposition to the growing power of France, or, to speak more properly, to the exorbitant ambition of the house of Bourbon, has been the principal affair of Europe, during the greatest part of the present period. The design of aspiring to universal monarchy was imputed to *Charles V.* as soon as he began to give proofs of his ambition and capacity. The same design was imputed to *Lewis XIV.* as soon as he began to feel his own strength, and the weakness of his neighbours. Neither of these princes was induced, I believe, by the flattery of his courtiers, or the apprehensions of his adversaries, to entertain so chimerical a design as this would have been, even in that false sense wherein the word universal is so often understood: and I mistake very much, if either of them was of a character, or in circumstances, to undertake it. Both of them had strong desires to raise their families higher, and to extend their dominions farther; but neither of them had that bold and adventurous ambition which makes a conqueror and an hero. These apprehensions

however were given wisely, and taken usefully. They cannot be given nor taken too soon when such powers as these arise; because when such powers as these are besieged as it were early by the common policy and watchfulness of their neighbours, each of them may in his turn of strength fall forth, and gain a little ground; but none of them will be able to push their conquests far, and much less to consummate the entire projects of their ambition. Besides the occasional opposition that was given to *Charles V.* by our *Henry VIII.* according to the different moods of humour he was in; by the Popes, according to the several turns of their private interest; and by the princes of Germany, according to the occasions or pretences that religion or civil liberty furnished; he had from his first setting out a rival and an enemy in *Francis I.* who did not maintain his cause “in forma pauperis,” if I may use such an expression; as we have seen the house of Austria sue, in our days, for dominion, at the gate of every palace in Europe. *Francis I.* was the principal in his own quarrels, paid his own armies, fought his own battles: and though his valour alone did not hinder *Charles V.* from subduing all Europe, as *Bayle*, a better philologer than politician, somewhere asserts, but a multitude of other circumstances easily to be traced in history; yet he contributed by his victories, and even by his defeats, to waste the strength and check the course of that growing power. *Lewis XIV.* had no rival of this kind in the house of Austria;

Austria, nor indeed any enemy of this importance to combat, till the prince of Orange became king of Great Britain; and he had great advantages in many other respects, which it is necessary to consider in order to make a true judgment on the affairs of Europe from the year one thousand six hundred and sixty. You will discover the first of these advantages, and such as were productive of all the rest, in the conduct of *Richlieu* and of *Mazarin*. *Richlieu* formed the great design, and laid the foundations: *Mazarin* pursued the design, and raised the superstructure. If I do not deceive myself extremely, there are few passages in history that deserve your Lordship's attention more than the conduct that the first and greatest of these ministers held, in laying the foundations I speak of. You will observe how he helped to embroil affairs on every side, and to keep the house of Austria at bay as it were; how he entered into the quarrels of Italy against Spain, into that concerning the Valteline, and that concerning the succession of Mantua; without engaging so deep as to divert him from another great object of his policy, subduing Rochelle and disarming the Huguenots. You will observe how he turned himself, after this was done, to stop the progress of *Ferdinand* in Germany. Whilst Spain fomented discontents at the court and disorders in the kingdom of France, by all possible means, even by taking engagements with the duke of *Rohan*, and for supporting the Protestants; *Richlieu* abetted the same interest in
Germany

Germany against *Ferdinand*, and in the Low Countries against Spain. The emperor was become almost the master in Germany. *Christian IV.* king of Denmark, had been at the head of a league, wherein the United Provinces, Sweden, and Lower Saxony, entered, to oppose his progress: but *Christian* had been defeated by *Tilly* and *Valstein*, and obliged to conclude a treaty at Lubec, where *Ferdinand* gave him the law. It was then that *Gustavus Adolphus*, with whom *Richlieu* made an alliance, entered into this war, and soon turned the fortune of it. The French minister had not yet engaged his master openly in the war: but when the Dutch grew impatient, and threatened to renew their truce with Spain, unless France declared; when the king of *Sweden* was killed, and the battle of Nordlingen lost; when Saxony had turned again to the side of the emperor, and Brandenburg and so many others had followed this example, that Hesse almost alone persisted in the Swedish alliance; then *Richlieu* engaged his master, and profited of every circumstance which the conjuncture afforded to engage him with advantage. For, first, he had a double advantage by engaging him so late: that of coming fresh into the quarrel against a wearied and almost exhausted enemy; and that of yielding to the impatience of his friends, who, pressed by their necessities and by the want they had of France, gave this minister an opportunity of laying those claims and establishing those pretensions, in all his treaties with Holland, Sweden,

den, and the princes and states of the empire, on which he had projected the future aggrandisement of France. The manner in which he engaged, and the air that he gave to his engagement, were advantages of the second sort, advantages of reputation and credit; yet were these of no small moment in the course of the war, and operated strongly in favour of France, as he designed they should, even after his death, and at and after the treaties of Westphalia. He varnished ambition with the most plausible and popular pretences. The elector of *Treves* had put himself under the protection of France: and, if I remember right, he made this step when the emperor could not protect him against the Swedes, whom he had reason to apprehend. No matter; the governor of Luxemburg was ordered to surprise *Treves*, and to seize the elector. He executed his orders with success, and carried this prince prisoner into Brabant. *Richlieu* seized the lucky circumstance; he reclaimed the elector; and on the refusal of the cardinal infant, the war was declared. France, you see, appeared the common friend of liberty; the defender of it in the Low Countries against the king of *Spain*, and in Germany against the emperor; as well as the protector of the princes of the empire, many of whose estates had been illegally invaded, and whose persons were no longer safe from violence even in their own palaces. All these appearances were kept up in the negotiations at Munster, where *Mazarin* reaped what *Richlieu* had sowed. The demands

demands that France made for herself were very great; but the conjuncture was favourable, and she improved it to the utmost. No figure could be more flattering than her's, at the head of these negotiations; nor more mortifying than the emperor's, through the whole course of the treaty. The princes and states of the empire had been treated as vassals by the emperor: France determined them to treat with him on this occasion as sovereigns, and supported them in this determination. Whilst Sweden seemed concerned for the Protestant interest alone, and shewed no other regard, as she had no other alliance; France affected to be impartial alike to the Protestant and to the Papist, and to have no interest at heart but the common interest of the Germanic Body. Her demands were excessive, but they were to be satisfied principally out of the emperor's patrimonial dominions. It had been the art of her ministers to establish this general maxim on many particular experiences, That the grandeur of France was a real, and would be a constant, security to the rights and liberties of the empire against the emperor: and it is no wonder therefore, this maxim prevailing, injuries, resentments, and jealousies being fresh on one side, and services, obligations, and confidence on the other, that the Germans were not unwilling France should extend her empire on this side of the Rhine, whilst Sweden did the same on this side of the Baltic. These treaties, and the immense credit and influence that France had acquired by them in the empire, put

put it out of the power of one branch of the house of Austria to return the obligations of assistance to the other, in the war that continued between France and Spain till the Pyrenean treaty. By this treaty the superiority of the house of Bourbon over the house of Austria was not only completed and confirmed, but the great design of uniting the Spanish and the French monarchies under the former was laid.

The third period therefore begins by a great change of the balance of power in Europe, and by the prospect of one much greater and more fatal. Before I descend into the particulars I intend to mention, of the course of affairs, and of the political conduct of the great powers of Europe in this third period; give me leave to cast my eyes once more back on the second. The reflection I am going to make seems to me important, and leads to all that is to follow.

The Dutch made their peace separately at Munster with Spain, who acknowledged then the sovereignty and independency of their commonwealth. The French, who had been, after our *Elisabeth*, their principal support, reproached them severely for this breach of faith. They excused themselves in the best manner, and by the best reasons, they could. All this your Lordship will find in the monuments of that time. But I think it not improbable that they had a motive you will not find there, and which it was not proper to give as a reason or excuse to the French. Might not the wise men amongst them consider, even then, besides the immediate

mediate advantages that accrued by this treaty to their commonwealth, that the imperial power was fallen ; that the power of Spain was vastly reduced ; that the house of Austria was nothing more than the shadow of a great name ; and that the house of Bourbon was advancing, by large strides, to a degree of power as exorbitant and as formidable as that of the other family had been in the hands of *Charles V.* of *Philip II.* and lately of the two *Ferdinands*? Might they not foresee, even then, what happened in the course of very few years, when they were obliged, for their own security, to assist their old enemies the Spaniards against their old friends the French? I think they might. Our *Charles I.* was no great politician ; and yet he seemed to discern that the balance of power was turning in favour of France, some years before the treaties of Westphalia. He refused to be neuter ; and threatened to take part with Spain, if the French pursued the design of besieging Dunkirk and Graveline, according to a concert taken between them and the Dutch, and in pursuance of a treaty for dividing the Spanish Low Countries, which *Richlieu* had negotiated. *Cromwell* either did not discern this turn of the balance of power, long afterwards, when it was much more visible ; or, discerning it, he was induced by reasons of private interest to act against the general interest of Europe. *Cromwell* joined with France against Spain ; and though he got Jamaica and Dunkirk, he drove the Spaniards into a necessity of making a peace with France, that has
disturbed

disturbed the peace of the world almost four-score years, and the consequences of which have well-nigh beggared in our times the nation he enslaved in his. There is a tradition, I have heard it from persons who lived in those days, and I believe it came from *Thurloe*, that *Cromwell* was in treaty with Spain, and ready to turn his arms against France, when he died. If this fact was certain, as little as I honour his memory, I should have some regret that he died so soon. But whatever his intentions were, we must charge the Pyrenean treaty, and the fatal consequences of it, in great measure to his account. The Spaniards abhorred the thought of marrying their Infanta to *Lewis XIV.* It was on this point that they broke the negotiation *Lionne* had begun: and your Lordship will perceive, that if they resumed it afterwards, and offered the marriage they had before rejected, *Cromwell's* league with France was a principal inducement to this alteration of their resolutions.

The precise point at which the scales of power turn, like that of the solstice in either tropic, is imperceptible to common observation: and in one case, as in the other, some progress must be made in the new direction, before the change is perceived. They who are in the sinking scale,---for in the political balance of power, unlike to all others, the scale that is empty sinks, and that which is full rises;---they who are in the sinking scale do not easily come off from the habitual prejudices of superior wealth, or power,
or

or skill, or courage, nor from the confidences that these prejudices inspire. They who are in the rising scale do not immediately feel their strength, nor assume that confidence in it which successful experience gives them afterwards. They who are the most concerned to watch the variations of this balance, misjudge often in the same manner, and from the same prejudices. They continue to dread a power no longer able to hurt them, or they continue to have no apprehensions of a power that grows daily more formidable. Spain verified the first observation at the end of the second period; when, proud and poor, and enterprising and feeble, she still thought herself a match for France. France verified the second observation at the beginning of the third period, when the triple alliance stopped the progress of her arms, which alliances much more considerable were not able to effect afterwards. The other principal powers of Europe, in their turns, have verified the third observation in both its parts, through the whole course of this period.

When *Lewis XIV.* took the administration of affairs into his own hands, about the year one thousand six hundred and sixty, he was in the prime of his age; and had, what princes seldom have, the advantages of youth and those of experience together. Their education is generally bad; for which reason, royal birth, that gives a right to the throne among other people, gave an absolute exclusion from it among the Marmalukes. His was, in all respects except one,

one, as bad as that of other princes. He jest-
ed sometimes on his own ignorance; and there
were other defects in his character, owing to
his education, which he did not see. But *Ma-
zarin* had initiated him betimes into the myste-
ries of his policy. He had seen a great part of
those foundations laid, on which he was to raise
the fabric of his future grandeur: and as *Ma-
zarin* finished the work that *Richlieu* began, he
had the lessons of one, and the examples of
both, to instruct him. He had acquired ha-
bits of secrecy and method, in business; of re-
serve, discretion, decency, and dignity, in beha-
viour. If he was not the greatest king, he was
the best actor of majesty at least, that ever filled
a throne. He by no means wanted that cou-
rage which is commonly called bravery, though
the want of it was imputed to him in the midst
of his greatest triumphs; nor that other cou-
rage, less ostentatious and more rarely found,
calm, steady, persevering resolution, which
seems to arise less from the temper of the body,
and is therefore called courage of the mind.
He had them both most certainly, and I could
produce unquestionable anecdotes in proof. He
was, in one word, much superior to any prince
with whom he had to do, when he began to
govern. He was furrounded with great cap-
tains bred in former wars, and with great mini-
sters bred in the same school as himself. They
who had worked under *Mazarin*, worked on
the same plan under him; and as they had the
advantage of genius and experience over most

of the ministers of other countries, so they had another advantage over those who were equal or superior to them : the advantage of serving a master whose absolute power was established ; and the advantage of a situation wherein they might exert their whole capacity without contradiction ; over that, for instance, wherein your Lordship's great-grandfather was placed, at the same time, in England ; and *John de Wit* in Holland. Among these ministers, *Colbert* must be mentioned particularly upon this occasion ; because it was he who improved the wealth, and consequently the power of France extremely, by the order he put into the finances, and by the encouragement he gave to trade and manufactures. The soil, the climate, the situation of France, the ingenuity, the industry, the vivacity of her inhabitants, are such ; she has so little want of the product of other countries, and other countries have so many real or imaginary wants to be supplied by her ; that when she is not at war with all her neighbours, when her domestic quiet is preserved, and any tolerable administration of government prevails, she must grow rich at the expence of those who trade, and even at the expence of those who do not open a trade, with her. Her bawbles, her modes, the follies and extravagances of her luxury, cost England, about the time we are speaking of, little less than eight hundred thousand pounds sterling a-year, and other nations in their proportions. *Colbert* made the most of all these advantageous circumstances, and whilst he

he filled the national sponge, he taught his successors how to squeeze it; a secret that he repented having discovered, they say, when he saw the immense sums that were necessary to supply the growing magnificence of his master.

This was the character of *Lewis XIV.* and this was the state of his kingdom at the beginning of the present period. If his power was great, his pretensions were still greater. He had renounced, and the Infanta with his consent had renounced, all right to the succession of Spain, in the strongest terms that the precaution of the councils of Madrid could contrive. No matter; he consented to these renunciations; but your Lordship will find by the letters of *Mazarin*, and by other memorials, that he acted on the contrary principle from the first, which he avowed soon afterwards. Such a power, and such pretensions, should have given, one would think, an immediate alarm to the rest of Europe. *Philip IV.* was broken and decayed, like the monarchy he governed. One of his sons died, as I remember, during the negotiations that preceded the year one thousand six hundred and sixty; and the survivor, who was *Charles II.* rather languished, than lived, from the cradle to the grave. So dangerous a contingency, therefore, as the union of the two monarchies of France and Spain, being in view forty years together; one would imagine that the principal powers of Europe had the means of preventing it constantly in view during the same time. But it was otherwise. France acted very systemati-

stances of inhumanity in the execution of it, as Spaniards alone could exercise, and that tribunal who had provoked this unhappy race to revolt could alone approve. Abroad, the conduct of these princes was directed by the same wild spirit of ambition: rash in undertaking tho' slow to execute, and obstinate in pursuing tho' unable to succeed, they opened a new sluice to let out the little life and vigour that remained in their monarchy. *Philip II.* is said to have been piqued against his uncle *Ferdinand*, for refusing to yield the empire to him on the abdication of *Charles V.* Certain it is, that as much as he loved to disturb the peace of mankind, and to meddle in every quarrel that had the appearance of supporting the Roman and oppressing every other church, he meddled little in the affairs of Germany. But, *Ferdinand* and *Maximilian* dead, and the offspring of *Maximilian* extinct, the kings of Spain espoused the interest of the other branch of their family, entertained remote views of ambition in favour of their own branch even on that side, and made all the enterprises of *Ferdinand* of Gratz, both before and after his elevation to the empire, the common cause of the house of Austria. What compleated their ruin was this; they knew not how to lose, nor when to yield. They acknowledged the independency of the Dutch commonwealth, and became the allies of their ancient subjects at the treaty of Munster: but they would not forego their usurped claim on Portugal, and they persisted to carry on singly the war

war against France. Thus they were reduced to such a lowness of power as can hardly be paralleled in any other case: and *Philip IV.* was obliged at last to conclude a peace, on terms repugnant to his inclination, to that of his people, to the interest of Spain, and to that of all Europe, in the Pyrenean treaty.

As to France; this æra of the entire fall of the Spanish power, is likewise that from which we may reckon that France grew as formidable, as we have seen her, to her neighbours, in power and pretensions. *Henry IV.* meditated great designs, and prepared to act a great part in Europe in the very beginning of this period, when *Ravaillac* stabbed him. His designs died with him, and are rather guessed at than known; for surely those which his historian *Perefixe* and the compiler of *Sully's* memorials ascribe to him, of a Christian commonwealth, divided into fifteen states, and of a senate to decide all differences, and to maintain this new constitution of Europe, are too chimerical to have been really his: but his general design of abasing the house of Austria, and establishing the superior power in that of Bourbon, was taken up, about twenty years after his death, by *Richlieu*, and was pursued by him and by *Mazarin* with so much ability and success, that it was effected entirely by the treaties of Westphalia and by the Pyrenean treaty; that is, at the end of the second of those periods I have presumed to propose to your Lordship.

When the third, in which we now are, will

end, and what circumstances will mark the end of it, I know not: but this I know, that the great events and revolutions, which have happened in the course of it, interest us still more nearly than those of the two precedent periods. I intended to have drawn up an elenchus or summary of the three; but I doubted, on further reflection, whether my memory would enable me to do it with exactness enough: and I saw, that, if I was able to do it, the deduction would be immeasurably long. Something of this kind, however, it may be reasonable to attempt, in speaking of the last period: which may hereafter occasion a further trouble to your Lordship.

But to give you some breathing-time, I will postpone it at present; and am, in the meanwhile,

My LORD,

Your, &c.

LETTER VII.

A Sketch of the State and History of Europe from the Pyrenean treaty in one thousand six hundred and fifty-nine, to the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight.

THE first observation I shall make on this third period of modern history is, that as the

the ambition of *Charles V.* who united the whole formidable power of Austria in himself, and the restless temper, the cruelty, and bigotry of *Philip II.* were principally objects of the attention and solicitude of the councils of Europe, in the first of these periods; and as the ambition of *Ferdinand II.* and *III.* who aimed at nothing less than extirpating the Protestant interest, and under that pretence subduing the liberties of Germany, were objects of the same kind in the second: so an opposition to the growing power of France, or, to speak more properly, to the exorbitant ambition of the house of Bourbon, has been the principal affair of Europe, during the greatest part of the present period. The design of aspiring to universal monarchy was imputed to *Charles V.* as soon as he began to give proofs of his ambition and capacity. The same design was imputed to *Lewis XIV.* as soon as he began to feel his own strength, and the weakness of his neighbours. Neither of these princes was induced, I believe, by the flattery of his courtiers, or the apprehensions of his adversaries, to entertain so chimerical a design as this would have been, even in that false sense wherein the word universal is so often understood: and I mistake very much, if either of them was of a character, or in circumstances, to undertake it. Both of them had strong desires to raise their families higher, and to extend their dominions farther; but neither of them had that bold and adventurous ambition which makes a conqueror and an hero. These apprehensions

however were given wisely, and taken usefully. They cannot be given nor taken too soon when such powers as these arise; because when such powers as these are besieged as it were early by the common policy and watchfulness of their neighbours, each of them may in his turn of strength fall forth, and gain a little ground; but none of them will be able to push their conquests far, and much less to consummate the entire projects of their ambition. Besides the occasional opposition that was given to *Charles V.* by our *Henry VIII.* according to the different moods of humour he was in; by the Popes, according to the several turns of their private interest; and by the princes of Germany, according to the occasions or pretences that religion or civil liberty furnished; he had from his first setting out a rival and an enemy in *Francis I.* who did not maintain his cause “in forma pauperis,” if I may use such an expression; as we have seen the house of Austria sue, in our days, for dominion, at the gate of every palace in Europe. *Francis I.* was the principal in his own quarrels, paid his own armies, fought his own battles: and though his valour alone did not hinder *Charles V.* from subduing all Europe, as *Bayle*, a better philologer than politician, somewhere asserts, but a multitude of other circumstances easily to be traced in history; yet he contributed by his victories, and even by his defeats, to waste the strength and check the course of that growing power. *Lewis XIV.* had no rival of this kind in the house of Austria;

Austria, nor indeed any enemy of this importance to combat, till the prince of Orange became king of Great Britain; and he had great advantages in many other respects, which it is necessary to consider in order to make a true judgment on the affairs of Europe from the year one thousand six hundred and sixty. You will discover the first of these advantages, and such as were productive of all the rest, in the conduct of *Richlieu* and of *Mazarin*. *Richlieu* formed the great design, and laid the foundations: *Mazarin* pursued the design, and raised the superstructure. If I do not deceive myself extremely, there are few passages in history that deserve your Lordship's attention more than the conduct that the first and greatest of these ministers held, in laying the foundations I speak of. You will observe how he helped to embroil affairs on every side, and to keep the house of Austria at bay as it were; how he entered into the quarrels of Italy against Spain, into that concerning the Valteline, and that concerning the succession of Mantua; without engaging so deep as to divert him from another great object of his policy, subduing Rochelle and disarming the Huguenots. You will observe how he turned himself, after this was done, to stop the progress of *Ferdinand* in Germany. Whilst Spain fomented discontents at the court and disorders in the kingdom of France, by all possible means, even by taking engagements with the duke of *Rohan*, and for supporting the Protestants; *Richlieu* abetted the same interest in
Germany

Germany against *Ferdinand*, and in the Low Countries against Spain. The emperor was become almost the master in Germany. *Christian IV.* king of Denmark, had been at the head of a league, wherein the United Provinces, Sweden, and Lower Saxony, entered, to oppose his progress: but *Christian* had been defeated by *Tilly* and *Valstein*, and obliged to conclude a treaty at Lubec, where *Ferdinand* gave him the law. It was then that *Gustavus Adolphus*, with whom *Richlieu* made an alliance, entered into this war, and soon turned the fortune of it. The French minister had not yet engaged his master openly in the war: but when the Dutch grew impatient, and threatened to renew their truce with Spain, unless France declared; when the king of *Sweden* was killed, and the battle of Nordlingen lost; when Saxony had turned again to the side of the emperor, and Brandenburg and so many others had followed this example, that Hesse almost alone persisted in the Swedish alliance; then *Richlieu* engaged his master, and profited of every circumstance which the conjuncture afforded to engage him with advantage. For, first, he had a double advantage by engaging him so late: that of coming fresh into the quarrel against a wearied and almost exhausted enemy; and that of yielding to the impatience of his friends, who, pressed by their necessities and by the want they had of France, gave this minister an opportunity of laying those claims and establishing those pretensions, in all his treaties with Holland, Sweden,

den, and the princes and states of the empire, on which he had projected the future aggrandisement of France. The manner in which he engaged, and the air that he gave to his engagement, were advantages of the second sort, advantages of reputation and credit; yet were these of no small moment in the course of the war, and operated strongly in favour of France, as he designed they should, even after his death, and at and after the treaties of Westphalia. He varnished ambition with the most plausible and popular pretences. The elector of *Treves* had put himself under the protection of France: and, if I remember right, he made this step when the emperor could not protect him against the Swedes, whom he had reason to apprehend. No matter; the governor of Luxemburg was ordered to surprise Treves, and to seize the elector. He executed his orders with success, and carried this prince prisoner into Brabant. *Richlieu* seized the lucky circumstance; he reclaimed the elector; and on the refusal of the cardinal infant, the war was declared. France, you see, appeared the common friend of liberty; the defender of it in the Low Countries against the king of *Spain*, and in Germany against the emperor; as well as the protector of the princes of the empire, many of whose estates had been illegally invaded, and whose persons were no longer safe from violence even in their own palaces. All these appearances were kept up in the negotiations at Munster, where *Mazarin* reaped what *Richlieu* had sowed. The demands

demands that France made for herself were very great; but the conjuncture was favourable, and she improved it to the utmost. No figure could be more flattering than her's, at the head of these negotiations; nor more mortifying than the emperor's, through the whole course of the treaty. The princes and states of the empire had been treated as vassals by the emperor: France determined them to treat with him on this occasion as sovereigns, and supported them in this determination. Whilst Sweden seemed concerned for the Protestant interest alone, and shewed no other regard, as she had no other alliance; France affected to be impartial alike to the Protestant and to the Papist, and to have no interest at heart but the common interest of the Germanic Body. Her demands were excessive, but they were to be satisfied principally out of the emperor's patrimonial dominions. It had been the art of her ministers to establish this general maxim on many particular experiences, That the grandeur of France was a real, and would be a constant, security to the rights and liberties of the empire against the emperor: and it is no wonder therefore, this maxim prevailing, injuries, resentments, and jealousies being fresh on one side, and services, obligations, and confidence on the other, that the Germans were not unwilling France should extend her empire on this side of the Rhine, whilst Sweden did the same on this side of the Baltic. These treaties, and the immense credit and influence that France had acquired by them in the empire, put

put it out of the power of one branch of the house of Austria to return the obligations of assistance to the other, in the war that continued between France and Spain till the Pyrenean treaty. By this treaty the superiority of the house of Bourbon over the house of Austria was not only completed and confirmed, but the great design of uniting the Spanish and the French monarchies under the former was laid.

The third period therefore begins by a great change of the balance of power in Europe, and by the prospect of one much greater and more fatal. Before I descend into the particulars I intend to mention, of the course of affairs, and of the political conduct of the great powers of Europe in this third period; give me leave to cast my eyes once more back on the second. The reflection I am going to make seems to me important, and leads to all that is to follow.

The Dutch made their peace separately at Munster with Spain, who acknowledged then the sovereignty and independency of their commonwealth. The French, who had been, after our *Elisabeth*, their principal support, reproached them severely for this breach of faith. They excused themselves in the best manner, and by the best reasons, they could. All this your Lordship will find in the monuments of that time. But I think it not improbable that they had a motive you will not find there, and which it was not proper to give as a reason or excuse to the French. Might not the wise men amongst them consider, even then, besides the immediate

mediate advantages that accrued by this treaty to their commonwealth, that the imperial power was fallen ; that the power of Spain was vastly reduced ; that the house of Austria was nothing more than the shadow of a great name ; and that the house of Bourbon was advancing, by large strides, to a degree of power as exorbitant and as formidable as that of the other family had been in the hands of *Charles V.* of *Philip II.* and lately of the two *Ferdinands*? Might they not foresee, even then, what happened in the course of very few years, when they were obliged, for their own security, to assist their old enemies the Spaniards against their old friends the French? I think they might. Our *Charles I.* was no great politician ; and yet he seemed to discern that the balance of power was turning in favour of France, some years before the treaties of Westphalia. He refused to be neuter ; and threatened to take part with Spain, if the French pursued the design of besieging Dunkirk and Graveline, according to a concert taken between them and the Dutch, and in pursuance of a treaty for dividing the Spanish Low Countries, which *Richlieu* had negotiated. *Cromwell* either did not discern this turn of the balance of power, long afterwards, when it was much more visible ; or, discerning it, he was induced by reasons of private interest to act against the general interest of Europe. *Cromwell* joined with France against Spain ; and though he got Jamaica and Dunkirk, he drove the Spaniards into a necessity of making a peace with France, that has
disturbed

disturbed the peace of the world almost four-score years, and the consequences of which have well-nigh beggared in our times the nation he enslaved in his. There is a tradition, I have heard it from persons who lived in those days, and I believe it came from *Thurloe*, that *Cromwell* was in treaty with Spain, and ready to turn his arms against France, when he died. If this fact was certain, as little as I honour his memory, I should have some regret that he died so soon. But whatever his intentions were, we must charge the Pyrenean treaty, and the fatal consequences of it, in great measure to his account. The Spaniards abhorred the thought of marrying their Infanta to *Lewis XIV.* It was on this point that they broke the negotiation *Lionne* had begun: and your Lordship will perceive, that if they resumed it afterwards, and offered the marriage they had before rejected, *Cromwell's* league with France was a principal inducement to this alteration of their resolutions.

The precise point at which the scales of power turn, like that of the solstice in either tropic, is imperceptible to common observation: and in one case, as in the other, some progress must be made in the new direction, before the change is perceived. They who are in the sinking scale,---for in the political balance of power, unlike to all others, the scale that is empty sinks, and that which is full rises;---they who are in the sinking scale do not easily come off from the habitual prejudices of superior wealth, or power,
or

or skill, or courage, nor from the confidences that these prejudices inspire. They who are in the rising scale do not immediately feel their strength, nor assume that confidence in it which successful experience gives them afterwards. They who are the most concerned to watch the variations of this balance, misjudge often in the same manner, and from the same prejudices. They continue to dread a power no longer able to hurt them, or they continue to have no apprehensions of a power that grows daily more formidable. Spain verified the first observation at the end of the second period; when, proud and poor, and enterprising and feeble, she still thought herself a match for France. France verified the second observation at the beginning of the third period, when the triple alliance stopped the progress of her arms, which alliances much more considerable were not able to effect afterwards. The other principal powers of Europe, in their turns, have verified the third observation in both its parts, through the whole course of this period.

When *Lewis XIV.* took the administration of affairs into his own hands, about the year one thousand six hundred and sixty, he was in the prime of his age; and had, what princes seldom have, the advantages of youth and those of experience together. Their education is generally bad; for which reason, royal birth, that gives a right to the throne among other people, gave an absolute exclusion from it among the Marmalukes. His was, in all respects except one,

one, as bad as that of other princes. He jest-
ed sometimes on his own ignorance; and there
were other defects in his character, owing to
his education, which he did not see. But *Ma-*
zarin had initiated him betimes into the myste-
ries of his policy. He had seen a great part of
those foundations laid, on which he was to raise
the fabric of his future grandeur: and as *Ma-*
zarin finished the work that *Richlieu* began, he
had the lessons of one, and the examples of
both, to instruct him. He had acquired ha-
bits of secrecy and method, in business; of re-
serve, discretion, decency, and dignity, in beha-
viour. If he was not the greatest king, he was
the best actor of majesty at least, that ever filled
a throne. He by no means wanted that cou-
rage which is commonly called bravery, though
the want of it was imputed to him in the midst
of his greatest triumphs; nor that other cou-
rage, less ostentatious and more rarely found,
calm, steady, persevering resolution, which
seems to arise less from the temper of the body,
and is therefore called courage of the mind.
He had them both most certainly, and I could
produce unquestionable anecdotes in proof. He
was, in one word, much superior to any prince
with whom he had to do, when he began to
govern. He was surrounded with great cap-
tains bred in former wars, and with great mini-
sters bred in the same school as himself. They
who had worked under *Mazarin*, worked on
the same plan under him; and as they had the
advantage of genius and experience over most

of the ministers of other countries, so they had another advantage over those who were equal or superior to them: the advantage of serving a master whose absolute power was established; and the advantage of a situation wherein they might exert their whole capacity without contradiction; over that, for instance, wherein your Lordship's great-grandfather was placed, at the same time, in England; and *John de Wit* in Holland. Among these ministers, *Colbert* must be mentioned particularly upon this occasion; because it was he who improved the wealth, and consequently the power of France extremely, by the order he put into the finances, and by the encouragement he gave to trade and manufactures. The soil, the climate, the situation of France, the ingenuity, the industry, the vivacity of her inhabitants, are such; she has so little want of the product of other countries, and other countries have so many real or imaginary wants to be supplied by her; that when she is not at war with all her neighbours, when her domestic quiet is preserved, and any tolerable administration of government prevails, she must grow rich at the expence of those who trade, and even at the expence of those who do not open a trade, with her. Her bawbles, her modes, the follies and extravagances of her luxury, cost England, about the time we are speaking of, little less than eight hundred thousand pounds sterling a-year, and other nations in their proportions. *Colbert* made the most of all these advantageous circumstances, and whilst he

he filled the national sponge, he taught his successors how to squeeze it; a secret that he repented having discovered, they say, when he saw the immense sums that were necessary to supply the growing magnificence of his master.

This was the character of *Lewis XIV.* and this was the state of his kingdom at the beginning of the present period. If his power was great, his pretensions were still greater. He had renounced, and the Infanta with his consent had renounced, all right to the succession of Spain, in the strongest terms that the precaution of the councils of Madrid could contrive. No matter; he consented to these renunciations; but your Lordship will find by the letters of *Mazarin*, and by other memorials, that he acted on the contrary principle from the first, which he avowed soon afterwards. Such a power, and such pretensions, should have given, one would think, an immediate alarm to the rest of Europe. *Philip IV.* was broken and decayed, like the monarchy he governed. One of his sons died, as I remember, during the negotiations that preceded the year one thousand six hundred and sixty; and the survivor, who was *Charles II.* rather languished, than lived, from the cradle to the grave. So dangerous a contingency, therefore, as the union of the two monarchies of France and Spain, being in view forty years together; one would imagine that the principal powers of Europe had the means of preventing it constantly in view during the same time. But it was otherwise. France acted very systemati-

cally from the year one thousand six hundred and sixty, to the death of King *Charles II.* of Spain. She never lost sight of her great object, the succession to the whole Spanish monarchy; and she accepted the will of the King of *Spain* in favour of the duke of *Anjou*. As she never lost sight of her great object during this time, so she lost no opportunity of increasing her power, while she waited for that of succeeding in her pretensions. The two branches of Austria were in no condition of making a considerable opposition to her designs and attempts. Holland, who of all other powers was the most concerned to oppose them; was at that time under two influences that hindered her from pursuing her true interest. Her true interest was to have used her utmost endeavours to unite closely and intimately with England on the restoration of king *Charles*. She did the very contrary. *John de Wit*, at the head of the *Louvestein* faction, governed. The interest of his party was to keep the house of Orange down; he courted therefore the friendship of France, and neglected that of England. The alliance between our nation and the Dutch was renewed, I think, in one thousand six hundred and sixty-two; but the latter had made a defensive league with France a little before, on the supposition principally of a war with England. The war became inevitable very soon. *Cromwell* had chastised them for their usurpations in trade, and the outrages and cruelties they had committed; but he had not cured them. The same spirit continued in
the

the Dutch, the same resentments in the English; and the pique of merchants became the pique of nations. France entered into the war on the side of Holland; but the little assistance she gave the Dutch, shewed plainly enough that her intention was to make these two powers waste their strength against one another, whilst she extended her conquests in the Spanish Low Countries. Her invasion of these provinces obliged *De Wit* to change his conduct. Hitherto he had been attached to France in the closest manner, had led his republic to serve all the purposes of France, and had renewed with the marshal *D'Estrades* a project of dividing the Spanish Netherlands between France and Holland, that had been taken up formerly, when *Richlieu* made use of it to flatter their ambition, and to engage them to prolong the war against Spain. A project not unlike to that which was held out to them by the famous preliminaries, and the extravagant barrier-treaty, in one thousand seven hundred and nine; and which engaged them to continue a war on the principle of ambition, into which they had entered with more reasonable and more moderate views.

As the private interests of the two *De Wits* hindered that commonwealth from being on her guard, as early as she ought to have been, against France; so the mistaken policy of the court of England, the short views and the profuse temper of the prince who governed, gave great advantages to *Lewis XIV.* in the pursuit of his designs. He bought Dunkirk: and your

Lordship knows how great a clamour was raised on that occasion against your noble ancestor; as if he alone had been answerable for the measure, and his interest had been concerned in it. I have heard our late friend Mr *George Clark* quote a witness, who was quite unexceptionable, but I cannot recal his name at present, who, many years after all these transactions, and the death of my lord *Clarendon*, affirmed, that the earl of *Sandwich* had owned to him, that he himself gave his opinion, among many others, officers and ministers, for selling Dunkirk. Their reasons could not be good, I presume to say; but several, that might be plausible at that time, are easily guessed. A prince like King *Charles*, who would have made as many bad bargains as any young spendthrift, for money; finding himself thus backed, we may assure ourselves, was peremptorily determined to sell: and whatever your great-grandfather's opinion was, this I am able to pronounce upon my own experience, that his treaty for the sale is no proof he was of opinion to sell. When the resolution of selling was once taken, to whom could the sale be made? To the Dutch? No. This measure would have been at least as impolitic, and, in that moment, perhaps more odious than the other. To the Spaniards? They were unable to buy: and, as low as their power was sunk, the principle of opposing it still prevailed. I have sometimes thought that the Spaniards, who were forced to make peace with Portugal, and to renounce all claim to that crown, four or five years afterwards,

wards, might have been induced to take this resolution then, if the regaining Dunkirk without any expence had been a condition proposed to them; and that the Portugese, who, notwithstanding their alliance with England and the indirect succours that France afforded them, were little able, after the treaty especially, to support a war against Spain, might have been induced to pay the price of Dunkirk, for so great an advantage as immediate peace with Spain, and the extinction of all foreign pretences on their crown. But this speculation concerning events so long ago passed, is not much to the purpose here. I proceed, therefore, to observe, that notwithstanding the sale of Dunkirk, and the secret leanings of our court to that of France, yet England was first to take the alarm when *Lewis XIV.* invaded the Spanish Netherlands in one thousand six hundred and sixty-seven; and the triple alliance was the work of an English minister. It was time to take this alarm; for from the moment that the King of *France* claimed a right to the county of Burgundy, the dutchy of Brabant, and such other portions of the Low Countries as devolved on his queen by the death of her father *Philip IV.* he pulled off the mask entirely. Volumes were written to establish, and to refute, this supposed right. Your Lordship, no doubt, will look into a controversy that has employed so many pens and so many swords; and I believe you will think it was sufficiently bold in the French, to argue from customs, that regulated the course of private successions in

certain provinces, to a right of succeeding to the sovereignty of those provinces; and to assert the divisibility of the Spanish monarchy, with the same breath with which they asserted the indivisibility of their own; although the proofs in one case were just as good as the proofs in the other, and the fundamental law of indivisibility was at least as good a law in Spain, as either this or the Salique law was in France. But however proper it might be for the French and Austrian pens to enter into long discussions, and to appeal, on this great occasion, to the rest of Europe; the rest of Europe had a short objection to make to the plea of France, which no sophisms, no quirks of law could evade. Spain accepted the renunciation as a real security; France gave them as such to Spain, and in effect to the rest of Europe. If they had not been thus given, and thus taken, the Spaniards would not have married their Infanta to the King of *France*, whatever distress they might have endured by the prolongation of the war. These renunciations were renunciations of all rights whatsoever to the whole Spanish monarchy, and to every part of it. The provinces claimed by France at this time were parts of it. To claim them, was therefore to claim the whole; for if the renunciations were no bar to the rights accruing to *Mary Theresa* on the death of her father *Philip IV.* neither could they be any to the rights that would accrue to her and her children on the death of her brother *Charles II.* an unhealthful youth, and who at this instant was
in

in immediate danger of dying; for to all the complicated distempers he brought into the world with him, the small-pox was added. Your Lordship sees how the fatal contingency of uniting the two monarchies of France and Spain stared mankind in the face; and yet nothing, that I can remember, was done to prevent it: not so much as a guaranty given, or a declaration made to assert the validity of these renunciations, and for securing the effect of them. The triple alliance indeed stopped the progress of the French arms, and produced the treaty of Aix la Chapelle. But England, Sweden, and Holland, the contracting powers in this alliance, seemed to look, and probably did look, no farther. France kept a great and important part of what she had surpris'd, or ravish'd, or purchased; for we cannot say with any propriety that she conquered: and the Spaniards were obliged to set all they saved to the account of gain. The German branch of Austria had been reduced very low in power and in credit under *Ferdinand III.* by the treaties of Westphalia, as I have said already. *Lewis XIV.* maintained, during many years, the influence these treaties had given him among the princes and states of the empire. The famous capitulation made at Frankfort, on the election of *Leopold*, who succeeded *Ferdinand* about the year one thousand six hundred and fifty-seven, was encouraged by the intrigues of France: and the power of France was looked upon as the sole power that could ratify and secure effectually the observation of
the

the conditions then made. The league of the Rhine was not renewed, I believe, after the year one thousand six hundred and sixty-six; but though this league was not renewed, yet some of these princes and states continued in their old engagement with France: whilst others took new engagements on particular occasions, according as private and sometimes very paltry interests, and the emissaries of France in all their little courts, disposed them. In short, the princes of Germany shewed no alarm at the growing ambition and power of *Lewis XIV.* but contributed to encourage one, and to confirm the other. In such a state of things, the German branch was little able to assist the Spanish branch against France, either in the war that ended by the Pyrenean treaty; or in that we are speaking of here, the short war that began in one thousand six hundred and sixty-seven, and was ended by the treaty of Aix la Chapelle in one thousand six hundred and sixty-eight. But it was not this alone that disabled the emperor from acting with vigour in the cause of his family then, nor that has rendered the house of Austria a dead weight upon all her allies ever since. Bigotry, and its inseparable companion cruelty, as well as the tyranny and avarice of the court of Vienna, created in those days, and has maintained in ours, almost a perpetual diversion of the imperial arms from all effectual opposition to France. I mean to speak of the troubles in Hungary. Whatever they became in their progress, they were caused originally by the usurpations

pations and persecutions of the emperor: and when the Hungarians were called rebels first, they were called so for no other reason than this, that they would not be slaves. The dominion of the emperor being less supportable than that of the Turks, this unhappy people opened a door to the latter to infest the empire, instead of making their country what it had been before, a barrier against the Ottoman power. France became a sure, though secret ally of the Turks, as well as the Hungarians; and has found her account in it, by keeping the emperor in perpetual alarms on that side, while she has ravaged the Empire and the Low Countries on the other. Thus we saw, thirty-two years ago, the arms of France and Bavaria in possession of Passau, and the malcontents of Hungary in the suburbs of Vienna. In a word, when *Lewis XIV.* made the first essay of his power, by the war of one thousand six hundred and sixty-seven, and founded, as it were, the councils of Europe concerning his pretensions on the Spanish succession, he found his power to be great beyond what his neighbours, or even he perhaps, thought it: great by the wealth, and greater by the united spirit, of his people; greater still by the ill policy, and divided interests, that governed those who had a superior common interest to oppose him. He found that the members of the triple alliance did not see, or seeing did not think proper to own that they saw, the injustice, and the consequence of his pretensions. They contented themselves to give to Spain an act of guaranty for securing
the

the execution of the treaty of Aix la Chapelle. He knew even then how ill the guaranty would be observed by two of them at least, by England and by Sweden. The treaty itself was nothing more than a composition between the bully and the bullied. Tournay, and Lifle, and Doway, and other places that I have forgot, were yielded to him; and he restored the county of Burgundy, according to the option that Spain made, against the interest and expectation too of the Dutch, when an option was forced upon her. The king of *Spain* compounded for his possession; but the emperor compounded at the same time for his succession, by a private eventual treaty of partition, which the commander of *Gremonville* and the count of *Aversberg* signed at Vienna. The same *Leopold*, who exclaimed so loudly in one thousand six hundred and ninety-eight, against any partition of the Spanish monarchy, and refused to submit to that which England and Holland had then made, made one himself in one thousand six hundred and sixty-eight, with so little regard to these two powers, that the whole ten provinces were thrown into the lot of France.

There is no room to wonder if such experience as *Lewis XIV.* had upon this occasion, and such a face of affairs in Europe, raising his hopes, raised his ambition: and if, in making peace at Aix la Chapelle, he meditated a new war, the war of one thousand six hundred and seventy-two; the preparations he made for it, by negotiations in all parts, by alliances where-

ever

ever he found ingression, and by the increase of his forces, were equally proofs of ability, industry, and power. I shall not descend into these particulars; your Lordship will find them pretty well detailed in the memorials of that time. But one of the alliances he made I must mention, though I mention it with the utmost regret and indignation. England was fatally engaged to act a part in this conspiracy against the peace and the liberty of Europe, nay, against her own peace and her own liberty; for a bubble's part it was, equally wicked and impolitic. Forgive the terms I use, my Lord; none can be too strong. The principles of the triple alliance, just and wise, and worthy of a king of England, were laid aside. Then, the progress of the French arms were to be checked, the ten provinces were to be saved, and by saving them the barrier of Holland was to be preserved. Now, we joined our councils and our arms to those of France, in a project that could not be carried on at all, as it was easy to foresee, and as the event shewed, unless it was carried on against Spain, the emperor, and most of the princes of Germany, as well as the Dutch; and which could not be carried on successfully, without leaving the ten provinces entirely at the mercy of France, and giving her pretence and opportunity of ravaging the empire, and extending her conquests on the Rhine. The medal of *Van Beuninghen*, and other pretences that France took for attacking the states of the Low Countries, were ridiculous. They imposed on no one: and the true object

object of *Lewis XIV.* was manifest to all. But what could a king of England mean? *Charles II.* had reasons of resentment against the Dutch, and just ones too no doubt. Among the rest, it was not easy for him to forget the affront he had suffered, and the loss he had sustained, when, depending on the peace that was ready to be signed, and that was signed at Breda in July, he neglected to fit out his fleet; and when that of Holland, commanded by *Ruyter*, with *Cornelius de Wit* on board as deputy or commissioner of the states, burnt his ships at Chatham in June. The famous perpetual edict, as it was called but did not prove in the event, against the election of a state-holder, which *John de Wit* promoted, carried, and obliged the prince of *Orange* to swear to maintain a very few days after the conclusion of the peace at Breda, might be another reason in the breast of King *Charles II.* as it was certainly a pretence of revenge on the Dutch, or at least on the *De Wits* and the *Louvestein* faction, that ruled almost despotically in that commonwealth. But it is plain, that neither these reasons, nor others of a more ancient date, determined him to this alliance with France; since he contracted the triple alliance within four or five months after the two events, I have mentioned, happened. What then did he mean? Did he mean to acquire one of the seven provinces, and divide them, as the Dutch had twice treated for the division of the ten with France? I believe not; but this I believe, that his inclinations were favourable to the Popish interest

interest in general, and that he meant to make himself more absolute at home ; that he thought it necessary to this end to humble the Dutch, to reduce their power, and perhaps to change the form of their government ; to deprive his subjects of the correspondence with a neighbouring Protestant and free state, and of all hope of succour and support from thence in their opposition to him ; in a word, to abet the designs of France on the continent, that France might abet his designs on his own kingdom. This, I say, I believe ; and this I should venture to affirm, if I had in my hands to produce, and was at liberty to quote, the private relations I have read formerly, drawn up by those who were no enemies to such designs, and on the authority of those who were parties to them. But whatever King *Charles II.* meant, certain it is, that his conduct established the superiority of France in Europe.

But this charge, however, must not be confined to him alone. Those who were nearer the danger, those who were exposed to the immediate attacks of France, and even those who were her rivals for the same succession, having either assisted her, or engaged to remain neutrals, a strange fatality prevailed, and produced such a conjuncture as can hardly be paralleled in history. Your Lordship will observe with astonishment, even in the beginning of the year one thousand six hundred and seventy-two, all the neighbours of France acting as if they had nothing to fear from her, and some as if they had
much

much to hope, by helping her to oppress the Dutch, and sharing with her the spoils of that commonwealth. “*Delenda est Carthago*,” was the cry in England, and seemed too a maxim on the continent.

In the course of the same year, you will observe that all these powers took the alarm, and began to unite in opposition to France. Even England thought it time to interpose in favour of the Dutch. The consequences of this alarm, of this sudden turn in the policy of Europe, and of that which happened by the massacre of the *De Wits*, and the elevation of the prince of Orange, in the government of the Seven Provinces, saved these provinces, and stopped the rapid progress of the arms of France. *Lewis XIV.* indeed surprised the seven provinces in this war, as he had surprised the ten in that of one thousand six hundred and sixty-seven, and ravaged defenceless countries with armies sufficient to conquer them, if they had been prepared to resist. In the war of one thousand six hundred and seventy-two, he had little less than one hundred and fifty thousand men on foot, besides the bodies of English, Swiss, Italians, and Swedes, that amounted to thirty or forty thousand more. With this mighty force he took forty places in forty days, imposed extravagant conditions of peace, played the monarch a little while at Utrecht; and as soon as the Dutch recovered from their consternation, and, animated by the example of the prince of Orange and the hopes of succour, refused these conditions, he

he went back to Versailles, and left his generals to carry on his enterprize: which they did with so little success, that Grave and Maestricht alone remained to him of all the boasted conquests he had made; and even these he offered two years afterwards to restore, if by that concession he could have prevailed on the Dutch at that time to make peace with him. But they were not yet disposed to abandon their allies; for allies now they had. The emperor and the king of *Spain* had engaged in the quarrel against France, and many of the princes of the empire had done the same. Not all. The Bavarian continued obstinate in his neutrality; and, to mention no more, the Swedes made a great diversion in favour of France in the empire; where the duke of *Hanover* abetted their designs as much as he could; for he was a zealous partisan of France, though the other princes of his house acted for the common cause. I descend into no more particulars. The war that *Lewis XIV.* kindled by attacking in so violent a manner the Dutch commonwealth, and by making so arbitrary an use of his first success, became general, in the Low Countries, in Spain, in Sicily, on the upper and lower Rhine, in Denmark, in Sweden, and in the provinces of Germany belonging to these two crowns; on the Mediterranean, the Ocean, and the Baltic. France supported this war with advantage on every side: and when your Lordship considers in what manner it was carried on against her, you will not be surprised that she did so. Spain had spirit, but too little

strength to maintain her power in Sicily, where Messina had revolted ; to defend her frontier on that side of the Pyrenees ; and to resist the great efforts of the French in the Low Countries. The empire was divided ; and, even among the princes who acted against France, there was neither union in their councils, nor concert in their projects, nor order in preparations, nor vigour in execution : and, to say the truth, there was not, in the whole confederacy, a man whose abilities could make him a match for the prince of *Conde* or the marshal of *Turenne* ; nor many who were in any degree equal to *Luxemburg*, *Crequi*, *Schomberg*, and other generals of inferior note, who commanded the armies of France. The emperor took this very time to make new invasions on the liberties of Hungary, and to oppress his Protestant subjects. The prince of *Orange* alone acted with invincible firmness, like a patriot and a hero. Neither the seductions of France nor those of England, neither the temptations of ambition nor those of private interest, could make him swerve from the true interest of his country, nor from the common interest of Europe. He had raised more sieges, and lost more battles, it was said, than any general of his age had done. Be it so. But his defeats were manifestly due in great measure to circumstances independent on him ; and that spirit, which even these defeats could not depress, was all his own. He had difficulties in his own commonwealth ; the governors of the Spanish Low Countries crossed his measures some-

sometimes; the German allies disappointed and broke them often; and it is not improbable that he was frequently betrayed. He was so, perhaps even by *Souches*, the imperial general: a Frenchman, according to *Bayle*; and a pensioner of Louvois, according to common report, and very strong appearances. He had not yet credit and authority sufficient to make him a centre of union to a whole confederacy, the soul that animated and directed so great a body. He came to be such afterwards; but at the time spoken of, he could not take so great a part upon him. No other prince or general was equal to it: and the consequences of this defect appeared almost in every operation. France was surrounded by a multitude of enemies, all intent to demolish her power. But, like the builders of Babel, they spoke different languages; and as those could not build, these could not demolish, for want of understanding one another. France improved this advantage by her arms, and more by her negotiations. Nimeghen was, after Cologne, the scene of these. England was the mediating power; and I know not whether our *Charles II.* did not serve her purposes more usefully in the latter, and under the character of mediator, than he did or could have done by joining his arms to her's, and acting as her ally. The Dutch were induced to sign a treaty with him, that broke the confederacy, and gave great advantage to France: for the purport of it was to oblige France and Spain to make peace on a plan to be proposed to them,

and no mention was made in it of the other allies that I remember. The Dutch were glad to get out of an expensive war. France promised to restore Maestricht to them, and Maestricht was the only place that remained unrecovered of all they had lost. They dropped Spain at Nimeghen, as they had dropped France at Munster; but many circumstances concurred to give a much worse grace to their abandoning of Spain, than to their abandoning of France. I need not specify them. This only I would observe: when they made a separate peace at Munster, they left an ally who was in condition to carry on the war alone with advantage, and they presumed to impose no terms upon him: when they made a separate peace at Nimeghen, they abandoned an ally who was in no condition to carry on the war alone, and who was reduced to accept whatever terms the common enemy prescribed. In their great distress in one thousand six hundred and seventy-three, they engaged to restore Maestricht to the Spaniards as soon as it should be retaken: it was not retaken, and they accepted it for themselves as the price of the separate peace they made with France. The Dutch had engaged farther, to make neither peace nor truce with the king of *France*, till that prince consented to restore to Spain all he had conquered since the Pyrenean treaty. But, far from keeping this promise in any tolerable degree, *Lewis XIV.* acquired, by the plan imposed on Spain at Nimeghen, besides the county of Burgundy, so many other coun-

countries and towns on the side of the ten Spanish provinces, that these, added to the places he kept of those which had been yielded to him by the treaty of Aix la Chapelle (for some of little consequence he restored) put into his hands the principal strength of that barrier, against which we goaded ourselves almost to death in the last great war; and made good the saying of the marshal of *Schomberg*, that to attack this barrier was to take the beast by his horns. I know very well what may be said to excuse the Dutch. The emperor was more intent to tyrannize his subjects on one side, than to defend them on the other. He attempted little against France; and the little he did attempt was ill ordered, and worse executed. The assistance of the princes of Germany was often uncertain, and always expensive. Spain was already indebted to Holland for great sums; greater still must be advanced to her if the war continued: and experience shewed that France was able, and would continue to prevail against her present enemies. The triple league had stopped her progress, and obliged her to abandon the county of Burgundy: but Sweden was now engaged in the war on the side of France, as England had been in the beginning of it; and England was now privately favourable to her interests, as Sweden had been in the beginning of it. The whole ten provinces would have been subdued in the course of a few campaigns more: and it was better for Spain and the Dutch too, that part should be saved by accepting a sort of composition,

tion, than the whole be risqued by refusing it. This might be alledged to excuse the conduct of the States General, in imposing hard terms on Spain, in making none for their other allies, and in signing alone: by which steps they gave France an opportunity that she improved with great dexterity of management, the opportunity of treating with the confederates one by one, and of beating them by detail in the cabinet, if I may so say, as she had often done in the field. I shall not compare these reasons, which were but too well founded in fact, and must appear plausible at least, with other considerations that might be, and were at the time, insisted upon. I confine myself to a few observations, which every knowing and impartial man must admit. Your Lordship will observe, first, that the fatal principle of compounding with *Lewis XIV.* from the time that his pretensions, his power, and the use he made of it, begun to threaten Europe, prevailed still more at Nimeghen than it had prevailed at Aix: so that although he did not obtain to the full all he attempted; yet the dominions of France were by common consent, on every treaty, more and more extended; her barriers on all sides were more and more strengthened; those of her neighbours were more and more weakened; and that power, which was to assert one day, against the rest of Europe, the pretended rights of the house of Bourbon to the Spanish monarchy, was more and more established, and rendered truly formidable in such hands, at least, during the course of

of the first eighteen years of the period. Your Lordship will please to observe, in the second place, that the extreme weakness of one branch of Austria, and the miserable conduct of both; the poverty of some of the princes of the empire, and the disunion, and, to speak plainly, the mercenary policy of all them; in short, the confined views, the false notions, and, to speak as plainly of my own as of other nations, the iniquity of the councils of England, not only hindered the growth of this power from being stopped in time, but nursed it up into strength almost insuperable by any future confederacy. A third observation is this: If the excuses made for the conduct of the Dutch at Nimeghen are not sufficient, they too must come in for their share in this condemnation, even after the death of the *De Wits*; as they were to be condemned most justly, during that administration, for abetting and favouring France. If these excuses, grounded on their inability to pursue any longer a war, the principal profit of which was to accrue to their confederates, for that was the case after the year one thousand six hundred and seventy-three, or one thousand six hundred and seventy-four, and the principal burden of which was thrown on them by their confederates; if these are sufficient, they should not have acted, for decency's sake as well as out of good policy, the part they did act in one thousand seven hundred and eleven and one thousand seven hundred and twelve, towards the late queen, who had complaints of the same kind, in a much higher de-

gree and with circumstances much more aggravating, to make of them, of the emperor, and of all the princes of Germany; and who was far from treating them and their other allies, at that time, as they treated Spain and their other allies in one thousand six hundred and seventy-eight. Immediately after the Dutch had made their peace, that of Spain was signed with France. The emperor's treaty with this crown and that of Sweden was concluded in the following year: and *Lewis XIV.* being now at liberty to assist his ally, whilst he had tied up the powers with whom he had treated from assisting theirs, he soon forced the king of *Denmark* and the elector of *Brandenburg* to restore all they had taken from the Swedes, and to conclude the peace of the north. In all these treaties he gave the law, and he was now at the highest point of his grandeur. He continued at this point for several years; and in this height of his power he prepared those alliances against it, under the weight of which he was at last well-nigh oppressed; and might have been reduced as low as the general interest of Europe required, if some of the causes, which worked now, had not continued to work in his favour, and if his enemies had not proved in their turn of fortune, as insatiable as prosperity had rendered him.

After he had made peace with all the powers with whom he had been at war, he continued to vex both Spain and the empire, and to extend his conquests in the Low Countries, and on the Rhine,

Rhine, both by the pen and the sword. He erected the chambers of Metz and of Brisach, where his own subjects were prosecutors, witnesses, and judges, all at once. Upon the decisions of these tribunals, he seized into his own hands, under the notion of dependencies, and the pretence of reunions, whatever towns or districts of country tempted his ambition, or suited his conveniency; and added, by these and by other means, in the midst of peace, more territories to those the late treaties had yielded to him, than he could have got by continuing the war. He acted afterwards, in the support of all this, without any bounds or limits. His glory was a reason for attacking Holland in one thousand six hundred and seventy-two, and his conveniency a reason for many of the attacks he made on others afterwards. He took Luxembourg by force; he stole Strasburg; he bought Cassel; and, whilst he waited the opportunity of acquiring to his family the crown of Spain, he was not without thoughts, nor hopes perhaps, of bringing into it the imperial crown likewise. Some of the cruelties he exercised in the empire may be ascribed to his disappointment in this view: I say, some of them; because in the war that ended by the treaty of Nimeghen, he had already exercised many. Tho' the French writers endeavour to slide over them, to palliate them, and to impute them particularly to the English that were in their service, for even this one of their writers has the front to advance; yet these cruelties, unheard of among civilized nations,

nations, must be granted to have been ordered by the councils, and executed by the arms, of France, in the Palatinate, and in other parts.

If *Lewis XIV.* could have contented himself with the acquisitions that were confirmed to him by the treaties of one thousand six hundred and seventy-eight and one thousand six hundred and seventy-nine, and with the authority and reputation which he then gained; it is plain that he would have prevented the alliances that were afterwards formed against him; and that he might have regained his credit amongst the princes of the empire, where he had one family-alliance by the marriage of his brother to the daughter of the elector Palatine, and another by that of his son to the sister of the elector of *Bavaria*; where Sweden was closely attached to him, and where the same principles of private interest would have soon attached others as closely. He might have remained not only the principal, but the directing power of Europe, and have held this rank with all the glory imaginable, till the death of the king of *Spain*, or some other object of great ambition, had determined him to act another part. But, instead of this, he continued to vex and provoke all those who were, unhappily for them, his neighbours, and that, in many instances, for trifles. An example of this kind occurs to me. On the death of the duke of *Deux Ponts*, he seized that little inconsiderable duchy, without any regard to the indisputable right of the king of *Sweden*, to the services that crown had rendered him, or to the
want

want he might have of that alliance hereafter. The consequence was, that Sweden entered, with the emperor, the king of *Spain*, the elector of Bavaria, and the States General, into the Alliance of Guaranty, as it was called, about the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-three, and into the famous league of Aufburg in one thousand six hundred and eighty-six.

Since I have mentioned this league, and since we may date from it a more general and a more concerted opposition to France than there had been before; give me leave to recal some of the reflections that have presented themselves to my mind, in considering what I have read, and what I have heard related, concerning the passages of that time. They will be of use to form our judgment concerning later passages. If the king of *France* became an object of aversion on account of any invasions he made, any deviations from public faith, any barbarities exercised where his arms prevailed, or the persecution of his Protestant subjects; the emperor deserved to be such an object, at least as much as he, on the same accounts. The emperor was so too, but with this difference relatively to the political system of the west: the Austrian ambition and bigotry exerted themselves in distant countries, whose interests were not considered as a part of this system; for otherwise there would have been as much reason for assisting the people of Hungary and of Transylvania against the emperor, as there had been formerly for assisting the people of the Seven United Provinces against

gainst Spain, or as there have been lately for assisting them against France: but the ambition and bigotry of *Lewis XIV.* were exerted in the Low Countries, on the Rhine, in Italy, and in Spain, in the very midst of this system, if I may say so, and with success that could not fail to subvert it in time. The power of the house of Austria, that had been feared too long, was feared no longer: and that of the house of Bourbon, by having been feared too late, was now grown terrible. The emperor was so intent on the establishment of his absolute power in Hungary, that he exposed the empire doubly to desolation and ruin for the sake of it. He left the frontier almost quite defenceless on the side of the Rhine, against the inroads and ravages of France: and by shewing no mercy to the Hungarians, nor keeping any faith with them, he forced that miserable people into alliances with the Turk, who invaded the empire and besieged Vienna. Even this event had no effect upon him. Your Lordship will find that *Sobieski* king of Poland, who had forced the Turks to raise the siege, and had fixed the imperial crown that tottered on his head, could not prevail on him to take those measures by which alone it was possible to cover the empire, to secure the king of *Spain*, and to reduce that power who was probably one day to dispute with him this prince's succession. *Tekeli* and the malecontents made such demands as none but a tyrant could refuse; the preservation of their ancient privileges, liberty of conscience, the convocation of a free diet

diet or parliament, and others of less importance. All was in vain. The war continued with them and with the Turks, and France was left at liberty to push her enterprizes almost without opposition against Germany and the Low Countries. The distress in both was so great, that the States General saw no other expedient for stopping the progress of the French arms, than a cessation of hostilities, or a truce of twenty years; which they negociated, and which was accepted by the emperor and the king of *Spain*, on the terms that *Lewis XIV.* thought fit to offer. By these terms he was to remain in full and quiet possession of all he had acquired since the years one thousand six hundred and seventy-eight, and one thousand six hundred and seventy-nine; among which acquisitions that of *Luxemburg* and that of *Straßburg* were comprehended. The conditions of this truce were so advantageous to France, that all their intrigues were employed to obtain a definitive treaty of peace upon the same conditions. But this was neither the interest nor the intention of the other contracting powers. The imperial arms had been very successful against the Turks. This success, as well as the troubles that followed upon it in the Ottoman armies and at the Porte, gave a reasonable expectation of concluding a peace on that side: and, this peace concluded, the emperor, and the empire, and the king of *Spain*, would have been in a much better posture to treat with France. With these views, that were wise and just, the league of *Ausburg* was

was made between the emperor, the kings of *Spain* and *Sweden* as princes of the empire, and the other circles and princes. This league was purely defensive. An express article declared it to be so: and as it had no other regard, it was not only conformable to the laws and constitutions of the empire, and to the practice of all nations, but even to the terms of the act of truce so lately concluded. This pretence therefore for breaking the truce, seizing the electorate of *Cologne*, invading the *Palatinate*, besieging *Philippsburg*, and carrying unexpected and undeclared war into the empire, could not be supported: nor is it possible to read the reasons published by France at this time, and drawn from her fears of the imperial power, without laughter. As little pretence was there to complain, that the emperor refused to convert at once the truce into a definitive treaty; since, if he had done so, he would have confirmed in a lump, and without any discussion, all the arbitrary decrees of those chambers, or courts, that France had erected to cover her usurpations; and would have given up almost a sixth part of the provinces of the empire, that France one way or other had possessed herself of. The pretensions of the *Dutchess of Orleans* on the succession of her father and her brother, which were disputed by the then elector *Palatine*, and were to be determined by the laws and customs of the empire, afforded as little pretence for beginning this war as any of the former allegations. The exclusion of the cardinal of *Furstenberg*, who had

had been elected to the archbishopric of Cologne, was capable of being aggravated: but even in this case his most Christian Majesty opposed his judgment and his authority against the judgment and authority of that holy father, whose eldest son he was proud to be called. In short, the true reason why *Lewis XIV.* began that cruel war with the empire, two years after he had concluded a cessation of hostilities for twenty, was this: he resolved to keep what he had got; and therefore he resolved to encourage the Turks to continue the war. He did this effectually, by invading Germany at the very instant when the sultan was suing for peace. Notwithstanding this, the Turks were in treaty again the following year: and good policy should have obliged the emperor, since he could not hope to carry on this war and that against France at the same time with vigour and effect, to conclude a peace with the least dangerous enemy of the two. The decision of this dispute with France could not be deferred; his designs against the Hungarians were in part accomplished, for his son was declared king, and the settlement of that crown in his family was made; and the rest of these, as well as those that he formed against the Turks, might be deferred. But the councils of Vienna judged differently, and insisted even at this critical moment on the most exorbitant terms; on some of such a nature, that the Turks shewed more humanity and a better sense of religion in refusing, than they in asking them. Thus the war went
on

on in Hungary, and proved a constant diversion in favour of France, during the whole course of that which *Lewis XIV.* began at this time: for the treaty of Carlowitz was posterior to that of Ryfwic. The empire, Spain, England, and Holland, engaged in the war with France; and on them the emperor left the burden of it. In the short war of one thousand six hundred and sixty-seven, he was not so much as a party; and instead of assisting the king of *Spain*, which, it must be owned, he was in no good condition of doing, he bargained for dividing that prince's succession, as I have observed above. In the war of one thousand six hundred and seventy-two, he made some feeble efforts. In this of one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight, he did still less: and in the war which broke out at the beginning of the present century, he did nothing, at least after the campaign in Italy, and after the engagements that England and Holland took by the grand alliance. In a word, from the time that an opposition to France became a common cause in Europe, the house of Austria has been a clog upon it in many instances, and of considerable assistance to it in in none. The accession of England to this cause, which was brought about by the revolution of one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight, might have made amends, and more than amends, one would think, for this defect, and have thrown superiority of power and of success on the side of the confederates, with whom she took part against France. This, I say, might be
be

be imagined, without over-rating the power of England, or undervaluing that of France; and it was imagined at that time. How it proved otherwise in the event; how France came triumphant out of the war that ended by the treaty of Ryswic, and, though she gave up a great deal, yet preserved the greatest and the best part of her conquests and acquisitions made since the treaties of Westphalia and the Pyrenées; how she acquired, by the gift of Spain, that whole monarchy for one of her princes, though she had no reason to expect the least part of it without a war at one time, nor the great lot of it even by a war at any time; in short, how she wound up advantageously the ambitious system she had been fifty years in weaving; how she concluded a war, in which she was defeated on every side, and wholly exhausted, with little diminution of the provinces and barriers acquired to France, and with the quiet possession of Spain and the Indies to a prince of the house of Bourbon: all this, my Lord, will be the subject of your researches, when you come down to the latter part of the last period of modern history.

L E T T E R VIII.

The same subject continued from the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight.

YOUR Lordship will find, that the objects proposed by the alliance of one thousand

O

six

fix hundred and eighty-nine between the emperor and the States, to which England acceded, and which was the foundation of the whole confederacy then formed, were no less than to restore all things to the terms of the Westphalian and Pyrenean treaties, by the war; and to preserve them in that state, after the war, by a defensive alliance and guaranty of the same confederate powers against France. The particular as well as general meaning of this engagement was plain enough; and if it had not been so, the sense of it would have been sufficiently determined, by that separate article, in which England and Holland obliged themselves to assist the
“house of Austria, in taking and keeping pos-
“session of the Spanish monarchy, whenever the
“case should happen of the death of *Charles II.*
“without lawful heirs.” This engagement was double, and thereby relative to the whole political system of Europe, alike affected by the power and pretensions of France. Hitherto the power of France had been alone regarded, and her pretensions seemed to have been forgot: or to what purpose should they have been remembered, whilst Europe was so unhappily constituted, that the states, at whose expence she increased her power, and their friends and allies, thought that they did enough upon every occasion if they made some tolerable composition with her? They who were not in circumstances to refuse confirming present, were little likely to take effectual measures against future, usurpations. But now, as the alarm was greater
than

than ever, by the outrages that France had committed, and the intrigues she had carried on; by the little regard she had shewn to public faith; and by the airs of authority she had assumed twenty years together: so was the spirit against her raised to an higher pitch; and the means of reducing her power, or at least of checking it, were increased. The princes and states who had neglected or favoured the growth of this power, which all of them had done in their turns, saw their error; saw the necessity of repairing it; and saw, that, unless they could check the power of France, by uniting a power superior to her's, it would be impossible to hinder her from succeeding in her great designs on the Spanish succession. The court of England had submitted, not many years before, to abet her usurpations; and the king of England had stooped to be her pensioner. But the crime was not national. On the contrary, the nation had cried out loudly against it, even whilst it was committing: and as soon as ever the abdication of King *James*, and the elevation of the Prince of *Orange* to the throne of England, happened, the nation engaged with all imaginable zeal in the common cause of Europe, to reduce the exorbitant power of France, to prevent her future and to revenge her past attempts; for even a spirit of revenge prevailed, and the war was a war of anger as well as of interest.

Unhappily this zeal was neither well conducted, nor well seconded. It was zeal without success, in the first of the two wars that followed

the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight; and zeal without knowledge, in both of them. I enter into no detail concerning the events of these two wars. This only I observe on the first of them, that the treaties of Ryfwic were far from answering the ends proposed and the engagements taken by the first grand alliance. The power of France, with respect to extent of dominions and strength of barrier, was not reduced to the terms of the Pyrenean treaty, no not to those of the treaty of Nimeghen. Lorrain was restored indeed with very considerable reserves, and the places taken or usurped on the other side of the Rhine; but then Strasburg was yielded up absolutely to France by the emperor and by the empire. The concessions to Spain were great; but so were the conquests and the encroachments made upon her by France, since the treaty of Nimeghen: and she got little at Ryfwic, I believe nothing more than she had saved at Nimeghen before. All these concessions, however, as well as the acknowledgment of King *William*, and others made by *Lewis XIV.* after he had taken Ath and Barcelona, even during the course of the negotiations, compared with the losses and repeated defeats of the allies and the ill state of the confederacy, surpris'd the generality of mankind, who had not been accustomed to so much moderation and generosity on the part of this prince. But the pretensions of the house of Bourbon on the Spanish succession remained the same. Nothing had been done to weaken them;

them; nothing was prepared to oppose them: and the opening of this succession was visibly at hand; for *Charles II.* had been in immediate danger of dying about this time. His death could not be a remote event: and all the good queen's endeavours to be got with child had proved ineffectual. The league dissolved; all the forces of the confederates dispersed, and many disbanded; France continuing armed, her forces by sea and land increased and held in readiness to act on all sides; it was plain, that the confederates had failed in the first object of the grand alliance, that of reducing the power of France; by succeeding in which alone they could have been able to keep the second engagement, that of securing the succession of Spain to the house of Austria.

After this peace, what remained to be done? In the whole nature of things, there remained but three. To abandon all care of the Spanish succession, was one; to compound with France upon this succession, was another; and to prepare, like her, during the interval of peace, to make an advantageous war whenever *Charles II.* should die, was a third. Now the first of these was to leave Spain, and, in leaving Spain, to leave all Europe, in some sort at the mercy of France; since whatever disposition the Spaniards should make of their crown, they were quite unable to support it against France; since the emperor could do little without his alliance; and since Bavaria, the third pretender, could do still less, and might find, in such a case, his ac-

count, perhaps, better in treating with the house of Bourbon than with that of Austria. More needs not be said on this head; but on the other two, which I shall consider together, several facts are proper to be mentioned, and several reflections necessary to be made.

We might have counter-worked, no doubt, in their own methods of policy, the councils of France, who made peace to dissolve the confederacy, and great concessions, with very suspicious generosity, to gain the Spaniards: we might have waited, like them, that is, in arms, the death of *Charles II.* and have fortified in the mean time the dispositions of the king, the court, and people of Spain, against the pretensions of France: we might have made the peace, which was made some time after that, between the emperor and the Turks; and have obliged the former at any rate to have secured the peace of Hungary, and to have prepared, by these and other expedients, for the war that would inevitably break out on the death of the king of *Spain.*

But all such measures were rendered impracticable, by the emperor chiefly. Experience had shewn, that the powers who engaged in alliance with him must expect to take the whole burden of his cause upon themselves; and that Hungary would maintain a perpetual diversion in favour of France, since he could not resolve to lighten the tyrannical yoke he had established in that country and in Transilvania, nor his ministers to part with the immense confiscations
they

they had appropriated to themselves. Past experience shewed this : and the experience that followed confirmed it very fatally. But further ; there was not only little assistance to be expected from him by those who should engage in his quarrel : he did them hurt of another kind, and deprived them of many advantages by false measures of policy and unskilful negotiations. Whilst the death of *Charles II.* was expected almost daily, the court of Vienna seemed to have forgot the court of Madrid, and all the pretensions on that crown. When the count *d'Har-rach* was sent thither, the imperial councils did something worse. The King of *Spain* was ready to declare the Archduke *Charles* his successor ; he was desirous to have this young prince sent into Spain ; the bent of the people was in favour of Austria ; or it had been so, and might have been easily turned the same way again : at court no cabal was yet formed in favour of Bourbon, and a very weak intrigue was on foot in favour of the electoral prince of *Bavaria*. Not only *Charles* might have been on the spot ready to reap the succession ; but a German army might have been there to defend it : for the court of Madrid insisted on having twelve thousand of these troops ; and, rather than not to have them, offered to contribute to the payment of them privately ; because it would have been too impopular among the Spaniards, and too prejudicial to the Austrian interest, to have had it known that the emperor declined the payment of a body of his own troops that were demand-

ed to secure that monarchy to his son. These proposals were half refused, and half evaded; and in return to the offer of the crown of Spain to the archduke, the imperial councils asked the government of Milan for him. They thought it a point of deep policy to secure the Italian provinces; and to leave to England and Holland the care of the Low Countries, of Spain, and the Indies. By declining these proposals, the house of Austria renounced in some sort the whole succession; at least she gave England and Holland reasons, whatever engagements these powers had taken, to refuse the harder task of putting her into possession by force; when she might, and would not, procure to the English and Dutch, and her other allies, the easier task of defending her in this possession.

I said that the measures mentioned above were rendered impracticable by the emperor chiefly, because they were rendered so likewise by other circumstances at the same conjuncture. A principal one I shall mention; and it shall be drawn from the state of our own country, and the disposition of our people. Let us take this up from King *William's* accession to our crown. During the whole progress that *Lewis XIV.* made towards such exorbitant power, as gave him well-grounded hopes of acquiring at last to his family the Spanish monarchy, England had been either an idle spectator of all that passed on the continent, or a faint and uncertain ally against France, or a warm and sure ally on her side, or a partial mediator between her and the powers

powers confederated in their common defence. The Revolution produced as great a change in our foreign conduct, as in our domestic establishment: and our nation engaged with great spirit in the war of one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight. But then this spirit was rash, presumptuous, and ignorant; ill conducted at home, and ill seconded abroad: all which has been touched already. We had waged no long wars on the continent, nor been very deeply concerned in foreign confederacies, since the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. The history of *Edward III.* however, and of the first twelve or fifteen years of *Henry VI.* might have taught us some general but useful lessons, drawn from remote times, but applicable to the present. So might the example of *Henry VIII.* who squandered away great sums for the profit of taking a town, or the honour of having an emperor in his pay; and who divided afterwards by treaty the kingdom of France between himself and *Charles V.* with success so little answerable to such an undertaking, that it is hard to believe his Imperial and English Majesty were both in earnest. If they were so, they were both the bubbles of their presumption. But it seems more likely that *Henry VIII.* was bubbled on this occasion by the great hopes that *Charles* held out to flatter his vanity; as he had been bubbled by his father-in-law *Ferdinand*, at the beginning of his reign, in the war of Navarre. But these reflections were not made, nor had we enough considered the example of *Elisabeth*,
the

the last of our princes who had made any considerable figure abroad, and from whom we might have learned to act with vigour, but to engage with caution, and always to proportion our assistance according to our abilities and the real necessities of our allies. The frontiers of France were now so fortified, her commerce and her naval force were so increased, her armies were grown so numerous, her troops were so disciplined, so inured to war, and so animated by a long course of successful campaigns, that they who looked on the situation of Europe could not fail to see how difficult the enterprise of reducing her power was become. Difficult as it was, we were obliged on every account, and by reasons of all kinds, to engage in it: but then we should have engaged with more forecast, and have conducted ourselves in the management of it, not with less alacrity and spirit, but with more order, more œconomy, and a better application of our efforts. But they who governed were glad to engage us at any rate: and we entered on this great scheme of action, as our nation is too apt to do, hurried on by the ruling passion of the day. I have been told by several, who were on the stage of the world at this time, that the generality of our people believed, and were encouraged to believe, the war could not be long, if the king was vigorously supported: and there is a humdrum speech of a speaker of the house of commons, I think, who humbly desired his Majesty to take this opportunity of reconquering his
ancient

ancient duchy of Aquitain. We were soon awakened from these gaudy dreams. In seven or eight years no impression had been made on France, that was besieged as it were on every side: and after repeated defeats in the Low Countries, where King *William* laid the principal stress of the war, his sole triumph was the retaking of Namur, that had been taken by the French a few years before. Unsustained by success abroad, we are not to wonder that the spirit flagged at home; nor that the discontents of those who were averse to the established government, uniting with the far greater number of those who disliked the administration, inflamed the general discontents of the nation, oppressed with taxes, pillaged by usurers, plundered at sea, and disappointed at land. As we run into extremes always, some would have continued this war at any rate, even at the same rate: but it was not possible they should prevail in such a situation of affairs, and such a disposition of minds. They who got by the war, and made immense fortunes by the necessities of the public, were not so numerous nor so powerful as they have been since. The moneyed interest was not yet a rival to cope with the landed interest, either in the nation or in parliament. The great corporations that had been erected more to serve the turn of party, than for any real national use, aimed indeed even then at the strength and influence which they have since acquired in the legislature; but they had not made the same progress by promoting
national

national corruption, as they and the court have made since. In short, the other extreme prevailed. The generality of people grew as fond of getting out of the war, as they had been of entering into it: and thus far perhaps, considering how it had been conducted, they were not much to be blamed. But this was not all; for when King *William* had made the peace, our martial spirit became at once so pacific, that we seemed resolved to meddle no more in the affairs of the continent, at least to employ our arms no more in the quarrels that might arise there: and accordingly we reduced our troops in England to seven thousand men.

I have sometimes considered, in reflecting on these passages, what I should have done, if I had sat in parliament at that time; and have been forced to own, myself, that I should have voted for disbanding the army then, as I voted in the following parliament for censuring the partition-treaties. I am forced to own this, because I remember how imperfect my notions were of the situation of Europe in that extraordinary crisis, and how much I saw the true interest of my own country in an half light. But, my Lord, I own it with some shame; because in truth nothing could be more absurd than the conduct we held. What! because we had not reduced the power of France by the war, nor excluded the house of Bourbon from the Spanish succession, nor compounded with her upon it by the peace; and because the house of Austria had not helped herself, nor put it in-
to

to our power to help her with more advantage and better prospect of success---were we to leave that whole succession open to the invasions of France, and to suffer even the contingency to subsist of seeing those monarchies united? What! because it was become extravagant, after the trials so lately made, to think ourselves any longer engaged by treaty, or obliged by good policy, to put the house of Austria in possession of the whole Spanish monarchy, and to defend her in this possession by force of arms, were we to leave the whole at the mercy of France? If we were not to do so, if we were not to do one of the three things that I said above remained to be done, and if the emperor put it out of our power to do another of them with advantage; were we to put it still more out of our power, and to wait unarmed for the death of the king of *Spain*? In fine, if we had not the prospect of disputing with France, so successfully as we might have had it, the Spanish succession, whenever it should be open; were we not only to shew, by disarming, that we would not dispute it all, but to censure likewise the second of the three things mentioned above, and which King *William* put in practice, the compounding with France, to prevent, if possible a war, in which we were averse to engage?

Allow me to push these reflections a little further; and to observe to your Lordship, that if the proposal of sending the archduke into Spain had been accepted in time by the imperial court, and taken effect and become a measure
of

of the confederacy, that war indeed would have been protracted; but France could not have hindered the passage of this prince and the German forces; and our fleet would have been better employed in escorting them, and in covering the coasts of Spain, and of the dominions of that crown, both in Europe and in America, than it was in so many unmeaning expeditions from the battle of La Hogue to the end of the war. France indeed would have made her utmost efforts to have had satisfaction on her pretensions, as ill founded as they were. She would have ended that war, as we began the next, when we demanded a reasonable satisfaction for the emperor: and though I think that the allies would have had, in very many respects, more advantages in defending Spain, than in attacking France; yet upon a supposition that the defence would have been as ill conducted as the attack was, and that by consequence, whether *Charles II.* had lived to the conclusion of this war, or had died before it, the war must have ended in some partition or other; this partition would have been made by the Spaniards themselves. They had been forced to compound with France on her former pretensions; and they must, and they would, have compounded on these, with an Austrian prince on the throne, just as they compounded, and probably much better than they compounded, on the pretensions we supported against them when they had a prince of Bourbon on their throne. France could not have distressed the Spaniards,
nor

nor have over-run their monarchy, if they had been united; and they would have been united in this case, and supported by the whole confederacy: as we distressed both France and them, over-run their monarchy in one hemisphere, and might have done so in both, when they were disunited, and supported by France alone. France would not have acted, in such negotiations, the ridiculous part which the emperor acted in those that led to the peace of Utrecht, nor have made her bargain worse by neglecting to make it in time. But the war ending as it did, though I cannot see how King *William* could avoid leaving the crown of Spain and that entire monarchy at the discretion of *Lewis XIV.* otherwise than by compounding to prevent a new war he was in no sort prepared to make; yet it is undeniable, that, by consenting to a partition of their monarchy, he threw the Spaniards into the arms of France. The first partition might have taken place, perhaps, if the electoral prince of *Bavaria* had lived, whom the French and Spaniards too would have seen much more willingly than the archduke on the throne of Spain. For among all the parties into which that court was divided in one thousand six hundred and ninety-eight, when this treaty was made, that of Austria was grown the weakest, by the disgust taken at a German queen, and at the rapacity and insolence of her favourites. The French were looked upon with esteem and kindness at Madrid; but the Germans were become, or growing to be, objects

jects of contempt to the ministers, and of aversion to the people. The electoral prince died in one thousand six hundred and ninety nine. The star of Austria, so fatal to all those who were obstacles to the ambition of that house, prevailed; as the elector expressed himself in the first pangs of his grief. The state of things changed very much by his death. The archduke was to have Spain and the Indies, according to a second partition: and the Spaniards, who had expressed great resentment at the first, were pushed beyond their bearing by this. They soon appeared to be so; for the second treaty of partition was signed in March one thousand seven hundred; and the will was made, to the best of my remembrance, in the October following. I shall not enter here into many particulars concerning these great events. They will be related faithfully, and I hope fully explained, in a work which your Lordship may take the trouble very probably of perusing some time or other, and which I shall rather leave, than give to the public. Something, however, must be said more, to continue and wind up this summary of the latter period of modern history.

France then saw her advantage, and improved it no doubt, though not in the manner, nor with the circumstances, that some lying scriblers of memorials and anecdotes have advanced. She had sent one of the ablest men of her court to that of Madrid, the marshal of *Harcourt*; and she had stipulated in the second treaty of partition,

tion, that the archduke should go neither into Spain nor the duchy of Milan during the life of *Charles II.* She was willing to have her option between a treaty and a will. By the acceptance of the will, all King *William's* measures were broke. He was unprepared for war as much as when he made these treaties to prevent one; and if he meant, in making them, what some wise but refining men have suspected, and what I confess I see no reason to believe, only to gain time by the difficulty of executing them, and to prepare for making war whenever the death of the king of *Spain* should alarm mankind, and rouse his own subjects out of their inactivity and neglect of foreign interests: if so, he was disappointed in that too; for France took possession of the whole monarchy at once, and with universal concurrence, at least without opposition or difficulty, in favour of the duke of *Anjou*. By what has been observed, or hinted rather, very shortly, and I fear a little confusedly, it is plain, that reducing the power of France, and securing the whole Spanish succession to the house of *Austria*, were two points that King *William*, at the head of the British and Dutch commonwealths and of the greatest confederacy Europe had seen, was obliged to give up. All the acquisitions that France cared to keep for the maintenance of her power were confirmed to her by the treaty of *Ryswic*: and King *William* allowed, indirectly at least, the pretensions of the house of *Bourbon* to the Spanish succession, as

Lewis XIV. allowed, in the same manner, those of the house of Austria by the treaties of partition. Strange situation! in which no expedient remained to prepare for an event, visibly so near, and of such vast importance, as the death of the king of *Spain*, but a partition of his monarchy, without his consent or his knowledge! If King *William* had not made this partition, the emperor would have made one, and with as little regard to trade, to the barrier of the seven provinces, or to the general system of Europe, as had been shewed by him when he made the private treaty with France already mentioned, in one thousand six hundred and sixty-eight. The ministers of Vienna were not wanting to insinuate to those of France overtures of a separate treaty, as more conducive to their common interests than the accession of his imperial majesty to that of partition. But the councils of Versailles judged very reasonably, that a partition made with England and Holland would be more effectual than any other, if a partition was to take place: and that such a partition would be just as effectual as one made with the emperor, to furnish arguments to the emissaries of France, and motives to the Spanish councils, if a will in favour of France could be obtained. I repeat it again; I cannot see what King *William* could do in such circumstances as he found himself in after thirty years struggle, except what he did: neither can I see how he could do what he did, especially after the resentment expressed by the Spaniards, and

and the furious memorial presented by *Canales* on the conclusion of the first treaty of partition, without apprehending that the consequence would be a will in favour of France. He was in the worst of all political circumstances, and that wherein no one good measure remains to be taken; and out of which he left the two nations, at the head of whom he had been so long, to fight and negotiate themselves and their confederates as well as they could.

When this will was made and accepted, *Lewis XIV.* had succeeded, and the powers in opposition to him had failed in all the great objects of interest and ambition which they had kept in fight for more than forty years, that is, from the beginning of the present period, the actors changed their parts in the tragedy that followed. The power, that had so long and so cruelly attacked, was now to defend, the Spanish monarchy; and the powers, that had so long defended, were now to attack it. Let us see how this was brought about: and that we may see it the better, and make a better judgment of all that passed from the death of *Charles II.* to the peace of Utrecht, let us go back to the time of his death, and consider the circumstances that formed this complicated state of affairs in three views; a view of right, a view of policy, and a view of power.

The right of succeeding to the crown of Spain would have been undoubtedly in the children of *Maria Theresa*, that is, in the house of Bourbon; if this right had not been barred by

the solemn renunciations so often mentioned. The pretensions of the house of Austria were founded on these renunciations, on the ratification of them by the Pyrenean treaty, and the confirmation of them by the will of *Philip IV.* The pretensions of the house of Bourbon were founded on a supposition, it was indeed no more, and a vain one too, that these renunciations were in their nature null. On this foot the dispute of right stood during the life of *Charles II.* and on the same it would have continued to stand even after his death, if the renunciations had remained unshaken; if his will, like that of his father, had confirmed them; and had left the crown, in pursuance of them, to the house of Austria. But the will of *Charles II.* annulling these renunciations, took away the sole foundation of the Austrian pretensions; for, however this act might be obtained, it was just as valid as his father's, and was confirmed by the universal concurrence of the Spanish nation to the new settlement he made of that crown. Let it be, as I think it ought to be, granted, that the true heirs could not claim against renunciations that were, if I may say so, conditions of their birth: but *Charles II.* had certainly as good a right to change the course of succession agreeable to the order of nature and the constitution of that monarchy, after his true heirs were born, as *Philip IV.* had to change it, contrary to this order and this constitution, before they were born, or at any other time. He had as good a right, in short, to dispense
with

with the Pyrenean treaty, and to set it aside in this respect, as his father had to make it: so that the renunciations being annulled by that party to the Pyrenean treaty who had exacted them, they could be deemed no longer binding, by virtue of this treaty, on the party who had made them. The sole question that remained therefore between these rival houses, as to right, was this, Whether the engagements taken by *Lewis XIV.* in the partition treaties obliged him to adhere to the terms of the last of them in all events, and to deprive his family of the succession which the king of *Spain* opened, and the Spanish nation offered, to them; rather than to depart from a composition he had made, on pretensions that were disputable then, but were now out of dispute? It may be said, and it was said, that the treaties of partition being absolute, without any condition or exception relative to any disposition the king of *Spain* had made or might make of his succession in favour of Bourbon or Austria; the disposition made by his will, in favour of the duke of *Anjou*, could not affect the engagements so lately taken by *Lewis XIV.* in these treaties, nor dispense with a literal observation of them. This might be true, on strict principles of justice; but I apprehend, that none of these powers, who exclaimed so loudly against the perfidy of France in this case, would have been more scrupulous in a parallel case. The maxim, “*Summum jus est summa injuria,*” would have been quoted; and the rigid letter of treaties would have been soften-

ed by an equitable interpretation of their spirit and intention. His imperial majesty, above all, had not the least colour of right to exclaim against France on this occasion; for in general, if his family was to be stripped of all their dominions they have acquired by breach of faith, and means much worse than the acceptance of the will, even allowing all the invidious circumstances imputed to the conduct of France to be true, the Austrian family would sink from their present grandeur to that low state they were in two or three centuries ago. In particular, the emperor, who had constantly refused to accede to the treaties of partition, or to submit to the dispositions made by them, had not the least plausible pretence to object to *Lewis XIV.* that he departed from them. Thus, I think, the right of the two houses stood on the death of *Charles II.* The right of the Spaniards, an independent nation, to regulate their own succession, or to receive the prince whom their dying monarch had called to it; and the right of England and Holland to regulate the succession, to divide, and parcel out, this monarchy in different lots; it would be equally foolish to go about to establish. One is too evident, the other too absurd, to admit of any proof. But enough has been said concerning right, which was in truth little regarded by any of the parties concerned immediately or remotely in the whole course of these proceedings. Particular interests were alone regarded; and these were pursued as ambition, fear, resentment, and vanity, directed;

I mean the ambition of the two houses contending for superiority of power; the fear of England and Holland, lest this superiority should become too great in either; the resentment of Spain at the dismemberment of that monarchy projected by the partition-parties; and the vanity of that nation, as well as the princes of the house of Bourbon: for as vanity mingled with resentment to make the will, vanity had a great share in determining the acceptation of it.

Let us now consider the same conjuncture in a view of policy. The policy of the Spanish councils was this. They could not brook that their monarchy should be divided: and this principle is expressed strongly in the will of *Charles II.* where he exhorts his subjects not to suffer any dismemberment or diminution of a monarchy founded by his predecessors with so much glory. Too weak to hinder this dismemberment by their own strength, too well apprised of the little force and little views of the court of Vienna, and their old allies having engaged to procure this dismemberment even by force of arms; nothing remained for them to do, upon this principle, but to detach France from the engagements of the partition-treaties, by giving their whole monarchy to a prince of the house of Bourbon. As much as may have been said concerning the negotiations of France to obtain a will in her favour, and yet to keep in reserve the advantages stipulated for her by the partition-treaties if such a will could not be obtained; and though I am persuaded that the marshal

of *Harcourt*, who helped to procure this will, made his court to *Lewis XIV.* as much as the marshal of *Tallard*, who negotiated the partitions; yet it is certain, that the acceptation of the will was not a measure definitively taken at Versailles when the king of *Spain* died. The alternative divided those councils; and, without entering at this time into the arguments urged on each side, adhering to the partitions seemed the cause of France, accepting the will that of the house of Bourbon.

It has been said by men of great weight in the councils of Spain, and was said at that time by men as little fond of the house of Bourbon, or of the French nation, as their fathers had been; that if England and Holland had not formed a confederacy and begun a war, they would have made *Philip V.* as good a Spaniard as any of the preceding *Philips*, and not have endured the influence of French councils in the administration of their government: but that we threw them entirely into the hands of France when we began the war, because the fleets and armies of this crown being necessary to their defence, they could not avoid submitting to this influence as long as the same necessity continued; and, in fact, we have seen that the influence lasted no longer. But notwithstanding this, it must be confessed, that a war was unavoidable. The immediate securing of commerce and of barriers, the preventing an union of the two monarchies in some future time, and the preservation of a certain degree at least of equality

equality in the scales of power, were points too important to England, Holland, and the rest of Europe, to be rested on the moderation of French, and the vigour of Spanish councils, under a prince of the house of France. If satisfaction to the house of Austria, to whose rights England and Holland shewed no great regard whilst they were better founded than they were since the will, had been alone concerned; a drop of blood spilt, or five shillings spent, in the quarrel, would have been too much profusion. But this was properly the scale into which it became the common interest to throw all the weight that could be taken out of that of Bourbon. And therefore your Lordship will find, that when negociations with *d'Avaux* were set on foot in Holland to prevent a war, or rather on our part to gain time to prepare for it, in which view the Dutch and we had both acknowledged *Philip* king of *Spain*; the great article we insisted on was, that reasonable satisfaction should be given the emperor, upon his pretensions founded on the treaty of partition. We could do no otherwise; and France, who offered to make the treaty of *Ryswic* the foundation of that treaty, could do no otherwise than refuse to consent that the treaty of partition should be so, after accepting the will, and thereby engaging to oppose all partition or dismemberment of the Spanish monarchy. I should mention none of the other demands of England and Holland, if I could neglect to point out to your Lordship's observation, that the same artifice was employ-

employed at this time, to perplex the more a negotiation that could not succeed on other accounts, as we saw employed in the course of the war, by the English and Dutch ministers, to prevent the success of negotiations that might and ought to have succeeded. The demand I mean is that of “a liberty not only to explain the terms proposed, but to increase or amplify them in the course of the negotiation.” I do not remember the words, but this is the sense, and this was the meaning of the confederates in both cases.

In the former, King *William* was determined to begin the war by all the rules of good policy; since he could not obtain, nay, since France could not grant, in that conjuncture, nor without being forced to it by a war, what he was obliged by these very rules to demand. He intended therefore nothing by this negotiation, if it may be called such, but to preserve forms and appearances, and perhaps, which many have suspected, to have time to prepare, as I hinted just now, both abroad and at home. Many things concurred to favour his preparations abroad. The alarm that had been given by the acceptance of the will, was increased by every step that France made to secure the effect of it. Thus, for instance, the surprising and seizing the Dutch troops, in the same night, and at the same hour, that were dispersed in the garrisons of the Spanish Netherlands, was not excused by the necessity of securing those places to the obedience of *Philip*, nor softened by the immediate dismissal
fion

sion of those troops. The impresson it made was much the same as those of the surprises and seizures of France in former usurpations. No one knew then, that the sovereignty of the ten provinces was to be yielded up to the elector of *Bavaria*; and every one saw that there remained no longer any barrier between France and the Seven Provinces. At home, the disposition of the nation was absolutely turned to a war with France on the death of King *James II.* by the acknowledgment *Lewis XIV.* made of his son as king of England. I know what has been said in excuse for this measure, taken, as I believe, on female importunity; but certainly without any regard to public faith, to the true interest of France in those circumstances, or to the true interest of the prince thus acknowledged in any. It was said, that the treaty of Ryswic obliging his most Christian majesty only not to disturb King *William* in his possession, he might, without any violation of it, have acknowledged this prince as king of England; according to the political casuistry of the French, and the example of France, who finds no fault with the powers that treat with the kings of England, although the kings of England retain the title of kings of France; as well as the example of Spain, who makes no complaints that other states treat with the kings of France, although the kings of France retain the title of Navarre. But besides that the examples are not apposite, because no other powers acknowledge in form the king of England to be king of France, nor the king of
France

France to be king of Navarre; with what face could the French excuse this measure? Could they excuse it, by urging, that they adhered to the strict letter of one article of the treaty of Ryswic, against the plain meaning of that very article, and against the whole tenor of that treaty; in the same breath with which they justified the acceptation of the will, by pretending they adhered to the supposed spirit and general intention of the treaties of partition, in contradiction to the letter, to the specific engagements, and to the whole purport, of those treaties? This part of the conduct of *Lewis XIV.* may appear justly the more surprising, because in most other parts of his conduct at the same time, and in some to his disadvantage, he acted cautiously, endeavoured to calm the minds of his neighbours, to reconcile Europe to his grandson's elevation, and to avoid all shew of beginning hostilities.

Though King *William* was determined to engage in a war with France and Spain, yet the same good policy that determined him to engage, determined him not to engage too deeply. The engagement taken in the grand alliance of one thousand seven hundred and one is,
“ To procure an equitable and reasonable satisfaction to his imperial majesty for his pretension to the Spanish succession; and sufficient security to the King of *England*, and the States General, for their dominions, and for the navigation and commerce of their subjects, and
“ to prevent the union of the two monarchies
“ of

“ of France and Spain.” As king of England, as stateholder of Holland, he neither could nor did engage any further. It may be disputed, perhaps, among speculative politicians, whether the balance of power in Europe would have been better preserved by that scheme of partition, which the treaties, and particularly the last of them, proposed, or by that which the grand alliance proposed to be the object of the war? I think there is little room for such a dispute, as I shall have occasion to say hereafter more expressly. In this place I shall only say, that the object of this war, which King *William* meditated, and Queen *Anne* waged, was a partition, by which a prince of the house of Bourbon, already acknowledged by us and the Dutch as king of Spain, was to be left on the throne of that dismembered monarchy. The wisdom of those councils saw that the peace of Europe might be restored and secured on this foot, and that the liberties of Europe would be in no danger.

The scales of the balance of power will never be exactly poised, nor in the precise point of equality either discernible or necessary to be discerned. It is sufficient in this, as in other human affairs, that the deviation be not too great. Some there will always be. A constant attention to these deviations is therefore necessary. When they are little, their increase may be easily prevented by early care and the precautions that good policy suggests. But when they become great for want of this care and these precautions,
or

or by the force of unforeseen events, more vigour is to be exerted, and greater efforts are to be made. But even in such cases, much reflection is necessary on all the circumstances that form the conjuncture; lest, by attacking with ill success, the deviation be confirmed, and the power that is deemed already exorbitant become more so; and lest, by attacking with good success, whilst one scale is pillaged, too much weight of power be thrown into the other. In such cases, he who has considered, in the histories of former ages, the strange revolutions that time produces, and the perpetual flux and reflux of public as well as private fortunes, of kingdoms and states as well as of those who govern or are governed in them, will incline to think, that if the scales can be brought back by a war, nearly, though not exactly, to the point they were at before this great deviation from it, the rest may be left to accidents, and to the use that good policy is able to make of them.

When *Charles V.* was at the height of his power, and in the zenith of his glory; when a king of France and a Pope were at once his prisoners; it must be allowed, that, his situation and that of his neighbours compared, they had as much at least to fear from him and from the house of Austria, as the neighbours of *Lewis XIV.* had to fear from him and from the house of Bourbon, when, after all his other success, one of his grandchildren was placed on the Spanish throne. And yet, among all the conditions of the several leagues against *Charles V.* I do

do not remember that it was ever stipulated, that “ no peace should be made with him as
“ long as he continued to be emperor and king
“ of Spain, nor as long as any Austrian prince
“ continued capable of uniting on his head the
“ Imperial and Spanish crowns.

If your Lordship makes the application, you will find, that the difference of some circumstances does not hinder this example from being very apposite, and strong to the present purpose. *Charles V.* was emperor and king of Spain; but neither was *Lewis XIV.* king of Spain, nor *Philip V.* king of France. That had happened in one instance, which it was apprehended might happen in the other. It had happened, and it was reasonably to be apprehended that it might happen again, and that the Imperial and Spanish crowns might continue, not only in the same family, but on the same heads; for measures were taken to secure the succession of both to *Philip* the son of *Charles*. We do not find, however, that any confederacy was formed, any engagement taken, or any war made, to remove or prevent this great evil. The princes and states of Europe contented themselves to oppose the designs of *Charles V.* and to check the growth of his power occasionally, and as interest invited or necessity forced them to do; not constantly. They did, perhaps, too little against him, and sometimes too much for him: but if they did too little of one kind, time and accident did the rest. Distinct dominions, and different pretensions, created contrary interests
in

in the house of Austria; and on the abdication of *Charles V.* his brother succeeded, not his son, to the empire. The house of Austria divided into a German and a Spanish branch: and if the two branches came to have a mutual influence on one another, and frequently a common interest, it was not till one of them had fallen from grandeur, and till the other was rather aiming at it, than in possession of it. In short, *Philip* was excluded from the imperial throne by so natural a progression of causes and effects, arising not only in Germany but in his own family, that if a treaty had been made to exclude him from it in favour of *Ferdinand*, such a treaty might have been said very probably to have executed itself.

The precaution I have mentioned, and that was neglected in this case without any detriment to the common cause of Europe, was not neglected in the grand alliance of one thousand seven hundred and one. For in that, one of the ends proposed by the war is, to obtain an effectual security against the contingent union of the crowns of France and Spain. The will of *Charles II.* provides against the same contingency: and this great principle of preventing too much dominion and power from falling to the lot of either of the families of Bourbon or Austria, seemed to be agreed on all sides; since in the partition-treaty the same precaution was taken against an union of the Imperial and Spanish crowns. King *William* was enough piqued against France. His ancient prejudices were

were strong and well founded. He had been worsted in war, over-reached in negotiation, and personally affronted by her. England and Holland were sufficiently alarmed and animated; and a party was not wanting, even in our island, ready to approve any engagements he would have taken against France and Spain, and in favour of the house of Austria; though we were less concerned, by any national interest, than any other power that took part in the war, either then, or afterwards. But this prince was far from taking a part beyond that which the particular interests of England and Holland, and the general interest of Europe, necessarily required. Pique must have no more a place than affection, in deliberations of this kind. To have engaged to dethrone *Philip*, out of resentment to *Lewis XIV.* would have been a resolution worthy of *Charles XII.* King of Sweden, who sacrificed his country, his people, and himself at last, to his revenge. To have engaged to conquer the Spanish monarchy for the house of Austria, or to go in favour of that family one step beyond those that were necessary to keep this house on a foot of rivalry with the other, would have been, as I have hinted, to act the part of a vassal, not of an ally. The former pawns his state, and ruins his subjects, for the interest of his superior lord, perhaps for his lord's humour or his passion: the latter goes no further than his own interest carries him; nor makes war for those of another, nor even for his own if they are remote and contingent, as if he

Q fought

fought *pro aris et focis*, for his religion, his liberty, and his property. Agreeably to these principles of good policy, we entered on the war that began on the death of *Charles II.* but we soon departed from them, as I shall have occasion to observe in considering the state of things, at this remarkable juncture, in a view of strength.

Let me recal here what I have said somewhere else. They who are in the sinking scale of the balance of power do not easily, nor soon, come off from the habitual prejudices of superiority over their neighbours, nor from the confidence that such prejudices inspire. From the year one thousand six hundred and sixty-seven, to the end of that century, France had been constantly in arms, and her arms had been successful. She had sustained a war, without any confederates, against the principal powers of Europe confederated against her; and had finished it with advantage on every side, just before the death of the king of *Spain*. She continued armed after the peace, by sea and land. She increased her forces, while other nations reduced theirs; and was ready to defend, or to invade her neighbours, whilst, their confederacy being dissolved, they were in no condition to invade her, and in a bad one to defend themselves. Spain and France had now one common cause. The electors of *Bavaria* and *Cologne* supported it in Germany, the duke of *Savoy* was an ally, the duke of *Mantua* a vassal of the two crowns in Italy. In a word, appearan-
ces

ces were formidable on that side ; and if a distrust of strength, on the side of the confederacy, had induced England and Holland to compound with France for a partition of the Spanish succession, there seemed to be still greater reason for this distrust after the acceptance of the will, the peaceable and ready submission of the entire monarchy of Spain to *Philip*, and all the measures taken to secure him in this possession. Such appearances might well impose. They did so on many, and on none more than on the French themselves, who engaged with great confidence and spirit in the war ; when they found it, as they might well expect it would be, unavoidable. The strength of France, however, tho' great, was not so great as the French thought it, nor equal to the efforts they undertook to make. Their engagement to maintain the Spanish monarchy entire under the dominion of *Philip*, exceeded their strength. Our engagement, to procure some out-skirts of it for the house of Austria, was not in the same disproportion to our strength. If I speak positively on this occasion, yet I cannot be accused of presumption ; because, how disputable soever these points might be when they were points of political speculation, they are such no longer, and the judgment I make is dictated to me by experience. France threw herself into the sinking scale, when she accepted the will. Her scale continued to sink during the whole course of the war, and might have been kept by the peace as low as the true interest of Europe re-

quired. What I remember to have heard the duke of *Marlborough* say, before he went to take on him the command of the army in the Low Countries in one thousand seven hundred and two, proved true. The French misreckoned very much, if they made the same comparison between their troops and those of their enemies, as they had made in precedent wars. Those that had been opposed to them, in the last, were raw for the most part when it began, the British particularly: but they had been disciplined, if I may say so, by their defeats. They were grown to be veteran at the peace of *Ryswic*; and though many had been disbanded, yet they had been disbanded lately; so that even these were easily formed a-new, and the spirit that had been raised continued in all. Supplies of men to recruit the armies were more abundant on the side of the confederacy, than on that of the two crowns: a necessary consequence of which it seemed to be, that those of the former would grow better, and those of the latter worse, in a long, extensive, and bloody war, I believe it proved so; and if my memory does not deceive me, the French were forced very early to send recruits to their armies, as they send slaves to their galleys. A comparison between those who were to direct their councils, and to conduct the armies on both sides, is a task it would become me little to undertake. The event shewed, that if France had had her *Conde*, her *Turenne*, or her *Luxemburg*, to oppose to the confederates; the confederates might have opposed

posed to her, with equal confidence, their *Eugene* of Savoy, their *Marlborough*, or their *Starenberg*. But there is one observation I cannot forbear to make. The alliances were concluded, the quotas were settled, and the season for taking the field approached, when King *William* died. The event could not fail to occasion some consternation on one side, and to give some hopes on the other; for, notwithstanding the ill success with which he made war generally, he was looked upon as the sole centre of union that could keep together the great confederacy then forming: and how much the French feared, from his life, had appeared a few years before, in the extravagant and indecent joy they expressed on a false report of his death. A short time shewed how vain the fears of some and the hopes of others were. By his death, the duke of *Marlborough* was raised to the head of the army, and indeed of the confederacy: where he, a new, a private man, a subject, acquired by merit and by management a more deciding influence, than high birth, confirmed authority, and even the crown of Great Britain, had given to King *William*. Not only all the parts of that vast machine, the grand alliance, were kept more compact and entire; but a more rapid and vigorous motion was given to the whole: and, instead of languishing out disastrous campaigns, we saw every scene of the war full of action. All those wherein he appeared, and many of those wherein he was not then an actor, but abettor, however, of their action,

were crowned with the most triumphant success. I take with pleasure this opportunity of doing justice to that great man, whose faults I knew, whose virtues I admired; and whose memory, as the greatest general and as the greatest minister that our country or perhaps any other has produced, I honour. But besides this, the observation I have made comes into my subject, since it serves to point out to your Lordship the proof of what I said above, that France undertook too much, when she undertook to maintain the Spanish monarchy entire in the possession of *Philip*: and that we undertook no more than what was proportionable to our strength, when we undertook to weaken that monarchy by dismembering it, in the hands of a prince of the house of Bourbon, which we had been disabled by ill fortune and worse conduct to keep out of them. It may be said that the great success of the confederates against France proves, that their generals were superior to her's, but not that their national strength were so: that with the same force with which she was beaten, she might have been victorious; that if she had been so, or if the success of the war had varied, or been less decisive against her in Germany, in the Low Countries, and in Italy, as it was in Spain, her strength would have appeared sufficient, and that of the confederacy insufficient. Many things may be urged to destroy this reasoning: I content myself with one. France could not long have made even the unsuccessful efforts she did make, if England and
Holland

Holland had done what it is undeniable they had strength to do; if besides pillaging, I do not say conquering, the Spanish West-Indies, they had hindered the French from going to the South Sea; as they did annually during during the whole course of the war without the least molestation, and from whence they imported into France at that time as much silver and gold as the whole species of that kingdom amounted to. With this immense and constant supply of wealth, France was reduced in effect to bankruptcy before the end of the war. How much sooner must she have been so, if this supply had been kept from her? the confession of France herself is on my side. She confessed her inability to support what she had undertaken, when she sued for peace as early as the year one thousand seven hundred and six. She made her utmost efforts to answer the expectation of the Spaniards, and to keep their monarchy entire. When experience had made it evident that this was beyond her power, she thought herself justified to the Spanish nation in consenting to a partition, and was ready to conclude a peace with the allies on the principles of their grand alliance. But as France seemed to flatter herself, till experience made her desirous to abandon an enterprise that exceeded her strength; you will find, my Lord, that her enemies began to flatter themselves in their turn, and to form designs and take engagements that exceeded theirs. Great Britain was drawn into these engagements little by little;

for I do not remember any parliamentary declaration for continuing the war till *Philip* should be dethroned, before the year one thousand seven hundred and six: and then such a declaration was judged necessary to second the resolution of our ministers and our allies, in departing from the principles of the grand alliance, and in proposing not only the reduction of the French, but the conquest of the Spanish monarchy, as the objects of the war. This new plan had taken place, and we had begun to act upon it two years before, when the treaty with Portugal was concluded, and the archduke *Charles*, now emperor, was sent into Portugal first, and into Catalonia afterwards, and was acknowledged and supported as king of Spain.

When your Lordship peruses the anecdotes of the times here spoken of, and considers the course and event of the great war which broke out on the death of the king of Spain, *Charles II.* and was ended by the treaties of Utrecht and Radstat; you will find, that in order to form a true judgment on the whole, you must consider very attentively the great change made by the new plan that I have mentioned; and compare it with the plan of the grand alliance, relatively to the general interest of Europe, and the particular interest of your own country. It will not, because it cannot, be denied, that all the ends of the grand alliance might have been obtained by a peace in one thousand seven hundred and six. I need not recal the events of that and of the precedent years of the war. Not only the
arms

arms of France had been defeated on every side, but the inward state of that kingdom was already more exhausted than it had ever been. She went on indeed, but she staggered and reeled under the burden of the war. Our condition, I speak of Great Britain, was not quite so bad; but the charge of the war increased annually upon us. It was evident that this charge must continue to increase; and it was no less evident that our nation was unable to bear it without falling soon into such distress, and contracting such debts, as we have seen and felt, and still feel. The Dutch neither restrained their trade, nor over-loaded it with taxes. They soon altered the proportion of their quotas, and were deficient even after this alteration in them. But, however, it must be allowed that they exerted their whole strength; and they and we paid the whole charge of the war. Since, therefore, by such efforts as could not be continued any longer, without oppressing and impoverishing these nations, to a degree that no interest except that of their very being, nor any engagement of assisting an alliance *totis viribus*, can require, France was reduced, and all the ends of the war were become attainable; it will be worth your Lordship's while to consider why the true use was not made of the success of the confederates against France and Spain, and why a peace was not concluded in the fifth year of the war. When your Lordship considers this, you will compare in your thoughts what the state of Europe would have been, and that of your own country might have

have been, if the plan of the grand alliance had been pursued; with the possible as well as certain, the contingent as well as necessary, consequences of changing this plan in the manner it was changed. You will be of opinion, I think, and it seems to me, after more than twenty years of recollection, re-examination, and reflection, that impartial posterity must be of the same opinion; you will be of opinion, I think, that the war was wise and just before the change, because necessary to maintain that equality among the powers of Europe on which the public peace and common prosperity depends: and that it was unwise and unjust after this change, because unnecessary to this end, and directed to other and to contrary ends. You will be guided by undeniable facts to discover, through all the false colours which have been laid, and which deceived many at the time, that the war, after this change, became a war of passion, of ambition, of avarice, and of private interest; the private interest of particular persons and particular states; to which the general interest of Europe was sacrificed so entirely, that if the terms insisted on by the confederates had been granted, nay, if even those which France was reduced to grant in one thousand seven hundred and ten had been accepted, such a new system of power would have been created, as might have exposed the balance of this power to deviations, and the peace of Europe to troubles, not inferior to those that the war was designed, when it began, to prevent. Whilst you observe this in general,
you

you will find particular occasion to lament the fate of Great Britain, in the midst of triumphs that have been sounded so high. She had triumphed indeed to the year one thousand seven hundred and six inclusively : but what were her triumphs afterwards? What was her success after she proceeded on the new plan? I shall say something on that head immediately. Here let me only say, that the glory of taking towns, and winning battles, is to be measured by the utility that results from those victories. Victories, that bring honour to the arms, may bring shame to the councils, of a nation. To win a battle, to take a town, is the glory of a general, and of an army. Of this glory we had a very large share in the course of the war. But the glory of a nation is to proportion the ends she proposes, to her interest and her strength ; the means she employs to the end she proposes, and the vigour she exerts to both. Of this glory, I apprehend, we have had very little to boast, at any time, and particularly in the great conjuncture of which I am speaking. The reasons of ambition, avarice, and private interest, which engaged the princes and states of the confederacy to depart from the principles of the grand alliance, were no reasons for Great Britain. She neither expected nor desired any thing more than what she might have obtained by adhering to those principles. What hurried our nation then, with so much spirit and ardour, into those of the new plan? Your Lordship will answer this question to yourself, I believe, by the prejudices and rashness

ness of party; by the influence that the first successes of the confederate arms gave to our ministers; and the popularity they gave, if I may say so, to the war; by ancient, and fresh resentments, which the unjust and violent usurpations, in short, the whole conduct of *Lewis XIV.* for forty years together, his haughty treatment of other princes and states, and even the style of his court, had created; and, to mention no more, by a notion, groundless but prevalent, that he was and would be master as long as his grandson was king of Spain, and that there could be no effectual measure taken, though the grand alliance supposed that there might, to prevent a future union of the two monarchies, as long as a prince of the house of Bourbon sat on the Spanish throne. That such a notion should have prevailed, in the first confusion of thoughts which the death and will of *Charles II.* produced among the generality of men, who saw the fleets and armies of France take possession of all the parts of the Spanish monarchy, is not to be wondered at by those that consider how ill the generality of mankind are informed; how incapable they are of judging, and yet how ready to pronounce judgment; in fine, how inconsiderately they follow one another in any popular opinion which the heads of party broach, or to which the first appearances of things have given occasion. But, even at this time, the councils of England and Holland did not entertain this notion. They acted on quite another, as might be shewn in many instances, if any other
ther

ther besides that of the grand alliance was necessary. When these councils, therefore, seemed to entertain this notion afterwards, and acted and took engagements to act upon it, we must conclude that they had other motives. They could not have these; for they knew, that as the Spaniards had been driven by the two treaties of partition to give their monarchy to a prince of the house of Bourbon, so they were driven into the arms of France by the war that we made to force a third upon them. If we acted rightly on the principles of the grand alliance, they acted rightly on those of the will: and if we could not avoid making an offensive war, at the expence of forming and maintaining a vast confederacy, they could not avoid purchasing the protection and assistance of France in a defensive war, and especially in the beginning of it, according to what I have somewhere observed already, by yielding to the authority and admitting the influence of that court in all the affairs of their government. Our ministers knew, therefore, that if any inference was to be drawn from the first part of this notion, it was for shortening, not prolonging, the war; for delivering the Spaniards as soon as possible from habits of union and intimacy with France; not for continuing them under the same necessity, till by length of time these habits should be confirmed. As to the latter part of this notion, they knew that it was false and silly. *Garth*, the best natured ingenious wild man I ever knew, might be in the right when he said, in some of his poems

poems at that time,

“ ———An Austrian prince alone,
“ Is fit to nod upon a Spanish throne.”

The setting an Austrian prince upon it was, no doubt, the surest expedient to prevent an union of the two monarchies of France and Spain; just as setting a prince of the house of Bourbon on that throne was the surest expedient to prevent an union of the Imperial and Spanish crowns. But it was equally false to say, in either case, that this was the sole expedient. It would be no paradox, but a proposition easily proved, to advance, that if these unions had been effectually provided against, the general interest of Europe would have been little concerned whether *Philip* or *Charles* had nodded at Madrid. It would be likewise no paradox to say, that the contingency of uniting France and Spain under the same prince appeared more remote, about the middle of the last great war, when the dethronement of *Philip* in favour of *Charles* was made a condition of peace *sine qua non*, than the contingency of an union of the Imperial and Spanish crowns. Nay, I know not whether it would be a paradox to affirm, that the expedient that was taken, and that was always obvious to be taken, of excluding *Philip* and his race from the succession of France, by creating an interest in all the other princes of the blood, and by consequence a party in France itself, for their exclusion, whenever the case should happen, was not in its nature more effectual than any

any that could have been taken, and some must have been taken, not only to exclude *Charles* from the empire whenever the case should happen that happened soon, the death of his brother *Joseph* without issue male, but his posterity likewise in all future vacancies of the imperial throne. The expedient that was taken again against *Philip* at the treaty of Utrecht, they who opposed the peace attempted to ridicule; but some of them have had occasion since that time to see, though the case has not happened, how effectual it would have been if it had: and he who should go about to ridicule it after our experience, would only make himself ridiculous. Notwithstanding all this, he who transports himself back to that time must acknowledge, that the confederated powers in general could not but be of *Garth's* mind, and think it more agreeable to the common interest of Europe, that a branch of Austria, than a branch of Bourbon, should gather the Spanish succession, and that the maritime powers, as they are called impertinently enough with respect to the superiority of Great Britain, might think it was for their particular interest to have a prince, dependant for some time at least on them, king of Spain, rather than a prince, whose dependence, as long as he stood in any, must be naturally on France. I do not say, as some have done, a prince whose family was an old ally, rather than a prince whose family was an old enemy; because I lay no weight on the gratitude of princes, and am much persuaded

suaded that an Austrian king of Spain would have made us returns of that sort in no other proportion than of his want of us, as I am that *Philip* and his race will make no other returns of the same sort to France. If this affair had been entire, therefore, on the death of the king of *Spain*; if we had made no partition, nor he any will; the whole monarchy of Spain would have been the prize to be fought for: and our wishes, and such efforts as we were able to make, in the most unprovided condition imaginable, must have been on the side of Austria. But it was far from being entire. A prince of the house of Austria might have been on the spot, before the king of *Spain* died, to gather his succession; but, instead of this, a prince of the house of Bourbon was there soon afterwards, and took possession of the whole monarchy, to which he had been called by the late king's will, and by the voice of the Spanish nation. The councils of England and Holland, therefore, preferred very wisely, by their engagements in the grand alliance, what was more practicable though less eligible, to what they deemed more eligible, but saw become by the course of events, if not absolutely impracticable, yet an enterprise of more length, more difficulty, and greater expence of blood and treasure, than these nations were able to bear; or than they ought to bear, when their security and that of the rest of Europe might be sufficiently provided for at a cheaper rate. If the confederates could not obtain, by the force of their arms, the
ends

ends of the war, laid down in the grand alliance, to what purpose would it be to stipulate for more? And if they were able to obtain these, it was evident, that, whilst they dismembered the Spanish monarchy, they must reduce the power of France. This happened; the Low Countries were conquered; the French were driven out of Germany and Italy; and *Lewis XIV.* who had so long and so lately set mankind at defiance, was reduced to sue for peace.

If it had been granted him in one thousand seven hundred and six, on what foot must it have been granted? The allies had already in their power all the states that were to compose the reasonable satisfaction for the emperor. I say, in their power; because though Naples and Sicily were not actually reduced at that time, yet the expulsion of the French out of Italy, and the disposition of the people of those kingdoms considered, it was plain the allies might reduce them when they pleased. The confederate arms were superior till then in Spain, and several provinces acknowledged *Charles III.* If the rest had been yielded to him by treaty, all that the new plan required had been obtained. If the French would not yet have abandoned *Philip*, as we had found that the Castilians would not, even when our army was at Madrid, all that the old plan, the plan of the grand alliance, required, had been obtained? But still France and Spain had given nothing to purchase a peace, and they were in circumstances not to expect it without purchasing it. They would have purchased it,

my Lord; and France, as well as Spain, would have contributed a larger share of the price, rather than continue the war in her exhausted state. Such a treaty of peace would have been a third treaty of partition indeed, but vastly preferable to the two former. The great objection to the former was drawn from that considerable increase of dominion, which the crown of France, and not a branch of the house of Bourbon, acquired by them. I know what may be said, speciously enough, to persuade that such an increase of dominion would not have augmented, but would rather have weakened, the power of France; and what examples may be drawn from history to countenance such an opinion. I know likewise, that the compact figure of France, and the contiguity of all her provinces, make a very essential part of the force of her monarchy. Had the designs of *Charles VIII.* *Lewis XII.* *Francis I.* and *Henry II.* succeeded, the dominions of France would have been more extensive, and I believe the strength of her monarchy would have been less. I have sometimes thought, that even the loss of the battle of St Quentin, which obliged *Henry II.* to recall the duke of *Guise* with his army out of Italy, was in this respect no unhappy event. But the reasoning which is good, I think, when applied to those times, will not hold when applied to ours, and to the case I consider here; the state of France, the state of her neighbours, and the whole constitution of Europe, being so extremely different. The objection therefore to the two treaties of
parti-

partition had a real weight. The power of France, deemed already exorbitant, would have been increased by this accession of dominion in the hands of *Lewis XIV.* and the use he intended to make of it by keeping Italy and Spain in awe, appears in the article that gave him the ports on the Tuscan coast, and the province of Guipuscoa. This King *William* might, and I question not, did see: but that prince might think too, that for this very reason *Lewis XIV.* would adhere, in all events, to the treaty of partition; and that these consequences were more remote, and would be less dangerous, than those of making no partition at all. The partition, even the worst that might have been made, by a treaty of peace in one thousand seven hundred and six, would have been the very reverse of this. France would have been weakened, and her enemies strengthened, by her concessions on the side of the Low Countries, of Germany, and Savoy. If a prince of her royal family had remained in possession of Spain and the West-Indies, no advantage would have accrued to her by it, and effectual bars would have been opposed to an union of the two monarchies. The house of Austria would have had a reasonable satisfaction for that shadow of right, which a former partition gave her. She had no other after the will of *Charles II.* and this may be justly termed a shadow, since England, Holland, and France, could confer no real right to the Spanish succession, nor to any part of it. She had declined acceding to that partition, before France

departed from it; and would have preferred the Italian provinces, without Spain and the West-Indies, to Spain and the West-Indies without the Italian provinces. The Italian provinces would have fallen to her share by this partition. The particular demands of England and Holland would have suffered no difficulty, and those that we were obliged by treaty to make for others would have been easy to adjust. Would not this have been enough, my Lord, for the public security, for the common interest, and for the glory of our arms? To have humbled and reduced, in five campaigns, a power that had disturbed and insulted Europe almost forty years; to have restored, in so short a time, the balance of power in Europe to a sufficient point of equality, after it had been more than fifty years, that is, from the treaty of Westphalia, in a gradual deviation from this point; in short, to have retrieved in one thousand seven hundred and six, a game that was become desperate at the beginning of the century; to have done all this before the war had exhausted our strength, was the utmost sure that any man could desire who intended the public good alone: and no honest reason ever was, nor ever will be given, why the war was protracted any longer; why we neither made peace after a short, vigorous, and successful war, nor put it entirely out of the power of France to continue at any rate a long one. I have said, and it is true, that this had been entirely out of her power, if we had given greater interruption to the commerce of Old
and

and New Spain; and if we had hindered France from importing annually, from the year one thousand seven hundred and two, such immense treasures as she did import by the ships she sent, with the permission of Spain, to the South Sea. It has been advanced, and it is a common opinion, that we were restrained by the jealousy of the Dutch from making use of the liberty given by treaty to them and us, and which, without his Imperial Majesty's leave, since we entered into the war, we might have taken, of making conquests in the Spanish West-Indies. Be it so. But to go to the South Seas; to trade there, if we could; to pillage the West-Indies without making conquests if we could not; and, whether we traded or whether we pillaged, to hinder the French from trading there; was a measure that would have given, one ought to think, no jealousy to the Dutch, who might, and it is to be supposed would, have taken their part in these expeditions; or if it had given them jealousy, what could they have replied when a British minister had told them: “ That it little be-
“ came them to find fault that we traded with
“ or pillaged the Spaniards in the West-Indies
“ to the detriment of our common enemy,
“ whilst we connived at them who traded with
“ this enemy to his and their great advantage,
“ against our remonstrances, and in violation of
“ the condition upon which we had given the
“ first augmentation of our forces in the Low
“ Countries?” We might have pursued this measure notwithstanding any engagement that

we took by the treaty with Portugal, if I remember that treaty right: but instead of this, we wasted our forces, and squandered millions after millions in supporting our alliance with this crown, and in pursuing the chimerical object which was made the object of this alliance. I call it chimerical, because it was equally so, to expect a revolution in favour of *Charles III.* on the slender authority of such a trifler as the admiral of Castile; and, when this failed us, to hope to conquer Spain by the assistance of the Portuguese, and the revolt of the Catalans. Yet this was the foundation upon which the new plan of the war was built, and so many ruinous engagements were taken.

The particular motives of private men, as well as of princes and states, to protract the war, are partly known, and partly guessed, at this time. But whenever that time comes, and I am persuaded it will come, when their secret motives, their secret designs and intrigues, can be laid open, I presume to say to your Lordship, that the most confused scene of iniquity and folly that it is possible to imagine will appear. In the mean while, if your Lordship considers only the treaty of barrier, as my lord *Townshend* signed it, without, nay in truth against, orders; for the duke of *Marlborough*, though joint plenipotentiary, did not: if you consider the famous preliminaries of one thousand seven hundred and nine, which we made a mock shew of ratifying, though we knew that they would not be accepted; for so the marquis

quis of *Torcy* had told the pensionary before he left the Hague, as the said marquis has assured me very often since that time: if you inquire into the anecdotes of Gertruydenberg, and if you consult other authentic papers that are extant, your Lordship will see the policy of the new plan, I think, in this light. Though we had refused, before the war began, to enter into engagements for the conquest of Spain; yet as soon as it began, when the reason of things was still the same, for the success of our first campaign cannot be said to have altered it, we entered into these very engagements. By the treaty wherein we took these engagements first, Portugal was brought into the grand alliance; that is, she consented to employ her formidable forces against *Philip*, at the expence of England and Holland, provided we would debar ourselves from making any acquisitions, and the house of Austria promise, that she should acquire many important places in Spain, and an immense extent of country in America. By such bargains as this, the whole confederacy was formed, and held together. Such means were indeed effectual to multiply enemies to France and Spain; but a project so extensive and so difficult as to make many bargains of this kind necessary, and necessary for a great number of years, and for a very uncertain event, was a project into which, for this very reason, England and Holland should not have entered. It is worthy your observation, my Lord, that these bad bargains would not have been conti-

nued, as they were almost to our immediate ruin, if the war had not been protracted under the pretended necessity of reducing the whole Spanish monarchy to the obedience of the house of Austria. Now, as no other confederate except Portugal was to receive his recompence by any dismemberment of dominions in Old or New Spain, the engagements we took to conquer this whole monarchy had no visible necessary cause, but the procuring the accession of this power, that was already neuter, to the grand alliance. This accession, as I have said before, served only to make us neglect immediate and certain advantages, for remote and uncertain hopes; and chuse to attempt the conquest of the Spanish nation at our own vast expence, whom we might have starved, and by starving reduced both the French and them, at their expence.

I called the necessity of reducing the whole Spanish monarchy to the obedience of the house of Austria, a pretended necessity: and pretended it was, not real, without doubt. But I am apt to think your Lordship may go further, and find some reasons to suspect, that the opinion itself of this necessity was not very real, in the minds of those who urged it: in the minds, I would say, of the able men among them; for that it was real in some of our zealous British politicians, I do them the justice to believe. Your Lordship may find reasons to suspect perhaps, that this opinion was set up rather to occasion a diversion of the forces of France, and
to

to furnish pretences for prolonging the war for other ends.

Before the year one thousand seven hundred and ten, the war was kept alive with alternate success in Spain ; and it may be said therefore, that the design of conquering this kingdom continued, as well as the hopes of succeeding. But why, then, did the States General refuse, in one thousand seven hundred and nine, to admit an article in the barrier-treaty, by which they would have obliged themselves to procure the whole Spanish monarchy to the house of Austria, when that zealous politician my lord *Townshend* pressed them to it ? If their opinion of the necessity of carrying on the war, till this point could be obtained, was real ; why did they risque the immense advantages given them with so much profuse generosity by this treaty, rather than consent to an engagement that was so conformable to their opinion ?

After the year one thousand seven hundred and ten, it will not be said, I presume, that the war could be supported in Spain with any prospect of advantage on our side. We had sufficiently experienced how little dependence could be had on the vigour of the Portuguese ; and how firmly the Spanish nation in general, the Castilians in particular, were attached to *Philip*. Our armies had been twice at Madrid, this prince had been twice driven from the capital, his rival had been there, none stirred in favour of the victorious, all wished and acted for the vanquished. In short, the falsehood of all those lures

lures, by which we had been enticed to make war in Spain, had appeared sufficiently in one thousand seven hundred and six; but was so grossly evident in one thousand seven hundred and ten, that Mr *Craggs*, who was sent towards the end of that year by Mr *Stanhope* into England, on commissions which he executed with much good sense and much address, owned to me, that, in Mr *Stanhope's* opinion, and he was not apt to despond of success, especially in the execution of his own projects, nothing could be done more in Spain, the general attachment of the people to *Philip*, and their aversion to *Charles*, considered: that armies of twenty or thirty thousand men might walk about that country till dooms-day, so he expressed himself, without effect: that wherever they came, the people would submit to *Charles* III. out of terror; and, as soon as they were gone, proclaim *Philip* V. again out of affection: that to conquer Spain, required a great army; and to keep it, a greater.

Was it possible, after this, to think in good earnest of conquering Spain; and could they be in good earnest who continued to hold the same language, and to insist on the same measures? Could they be so in the following year, when the emperor *Joseph* died? *Charles* was become then the sole surviving male of the house of Austria, and succeeded to the empire as well as to all the hereditary dominions of that family. Could they be in earnest who maintained, even in this conjuncture, that “no peace could be safe, honourable,

“nourable, or lasting, so long as the kingdom
“of Spain and the West-Indies remained in the
“possession of any branch of the house of Bour-
“bon?” Did they mean that *Charles* should be
emperor and king of Spain? In this project
they would have had the allies against them.
Did they mean to call the duke of *Savoy* to the
crown of Spain, or to bestow it on some other
prince? In this project they would have had
his Imperial Majesty against them. In either
case, the confederacy would have been broken :
and how then would they have continued the
war? Did they mean nothing, or did they mean
something more than they owned ; something
more than to reduce the exorbitant power of
France, and to force the whole Spanish mo-
narchy out of the house of Bourbon?

Both these ends might have been obtained at
Gertruydenberg. Why were they not obtained?
Read the preliminaries of one thousand seven
hundred and nine, which were made the foun-
dations of this treaty. Inform yourself of what
passed there, and observe what followed. Your
Lordship will remain astonished. I remain so
every time I reflect upon them, though I saw
these things at no very great distance, even
whilst they were in transaction ; and though I
know most certainly that France lost, two years
before, by the little skill and address of her
principal * minister, in answering overtures
made during the siege of Lisle by a principal
person among the allies, such an opportunity,
and such a correspondence, as would have re-
moved

* CHAMILLARD.

moved some of the obstacles that lay now in her way, have prevented others, and have procured her peace. An equivalent for the thirty-seventh article of the preliminaries, that is, for the cession of Spain and the West-Indies, was the point to be discussed at Gertruydenberg. Naples and Sicily, or even Naples and Sardinia, would have contented the French; at least they would have accepted them as the equivalent. *Buys* and *Vanderdussen*, who treated with them, reported this to the ministers of the allies: and it was upon this occasion that the duke of *Marlborough*, as *Buys* himself told me, took immediately the lead, and congratulated the assembly on the near approach of a peace; said, that since the French were in this disposition, it was time to consider what further demands should be made upon them, according to the liberty observed in the preliminaries; and exhorted all the ministers of the allies to adjust their several ulterior pretensions, and to prepare their demands.

This proceeding, and what followed, put me in mind of that of the Romans with the Carthaginians. The former were resolved to consent to no peace till Carthage was laid in ruins. They set a treaty however on foot, at the request of their old enemy, imposed some terms, and referred them to their generals for the rest. Their generals pursued the same method, and, by reserving still a right of making ulterior demands, they reduced the Carthaginians at last to the necessity of abandoning their city, or of continuing

continuing the war, after they had given up their arms, their machines, and their fleet, in hopes of peace.

France saw the snare, and resolved to run any risque rather than to be caught in it. We continued to demand, under pretence of securing the cession of Spain and the West-Indies, that *Lewis XIV.* should take on him to dethrone his grandson in the space of two months; and, if he did not effect it in that time, that we should be at liberty to renew the war without restoring the places that were to be put into our hands according to the preliminaries; which were the most important places France possessed on the side of the Low Countries. *Lewis* offered to abandon his grandson; and, if he could not prevail on him to resign, to furnish money to the allies, who might at the expence of France force him to evacuate Spain. The proposition made by the allies had an air of inhumanity: and the rest of mankind might be shocked, to see the grandfather obliged to make war on his grandson. But *Lewis XIV.* had treated mankind with too much inhumanity in his prosperous days, to have any reason to complain even of this proposition. His people indeed, who are apt to have great partiality for their kings, might pity his distress. This happened, and he found his account in it. *Philip* must have evacuated Spain, I think, notwithstanding his own obstinacy, the spirit of his queen, and the resolute attachment of the Spaniards, if his grandfather had insisted, and been in earnest to force him. But if this expedient

expedient was, as it was, odious, why did we prefer to continue the war against France and Spain, rather than accept the other? Why did we neglect the opportunity of reducing effectually and immediately the exorbitant power of France, and of rendering the conquest of Spain practicable? both which might have been brought about, and consequently the avowed ends of the war might have been answered, by accepting the expedient that France offered. “France,” it was said, “was not sincere: she meant no-
“thing more than to amuse, and divide.” This reason was given at the time; but some of those who gave it then, I have seen ashamed to insist on it since. France was not in a condition to act the part she had acted in former treaties: and her distress was no bad pledge of her sincerity on this occasion. But there was a better still. The strong places that she must have put into the hands of the allies, would have exposed her, on the least breach of faith, to see, not her frontier alone, but even the provinces that lie behind it, desolated: and prince *Eugene* might have had the satisfaction, it is said, I know not how truly, he desired, of marching with the torch in his hand to Versailles.

Your Lordship will observe, that the conferences at Gertruydenberg ending in the manner they did, the inflexibility of the allies gave new life and spirit to the French and Spanish nations, distressed and exhausted as they were. The troops of the former withdrawn out of Spain, and the Spaniards left to defend themselves as
they

they could, the Spaniards alone obliged us to retreat from Madrid, and defeated us in our retreat. But your Lordship may think perhaps, as I do, that if *Lewis XIV.* had bound himself by a solemn treaty to abandon his grandson, had paid a subsidy to dethrone him, and had consented to acknowledge another king of Spain, the Spaniards would not have exerted the same zeal for *Philip*; the actions of Almenara and Saragossa might have been decisive, and those of Brihuega and Villa Viciosa would not have happened. After all these events, how could any reasonable man expect that a war should be supported with advantage in Spain, to which the court of Vienna had contributed nothing from the first, scarce bread to their archduke; which Portugal waged faintly and with deficient quotas; and which the Dutch had in a manner renounced, by neglecting to recruit their forces? How was *Charles* to be placed on the Spanish throne, or *Philip* at least to be driven out of it? by the success of the confederate arms in other parts. But what success sufficient to this purpose could we expect? This question may be answered best, by shewing what success we had.

Portugal and *Savoy* did nothing before the death of the emperor *Joseph*; and declared in form, as soon as he was dead, that they would carry on the war no longer to set the crown of Spain on the head of *Charles*, since this would be to fight against the very principle they had fought for. The Rhine was a scene of inaction. The sole efforts, that were to bring about the
great

great event of dethroning *Philip*, were those which the duke of *Marlborough* was able to make. He took three towns in one thousand seven hundred and ten, Aire, Bethune, and St Venant; and one, Bouchain, in one thousand seven hundred and eleven. Now this conquest being in fact the only one the confederates made that year, Bouchain may be said properly and truly to have cost our nation very near seven millions sterling; for your Lordship will find, I believe, that the charge of the war for that year amounted to no less. It is true, that the duke of *Marlborough* had proposed a very great project, by which incursions would have been made during the winter into France; the next campaign might have been opened early on our side; and several other great and obvious advantages might have been obtained: but the Dutch refused to contribute, even less than their proportion, for the queen offered to take the deficiency on herself, to the expence of barracks and forage; and disappointed by their obstinacy the whole design.

We were then amused with visionary schemes of marching our whole army, in a year or two more, and, after a town or two more were taken, directly to Paris, or at least into the heart of France. But was this so easy or so sure a game? The French expected we would play it. Their generals had visited the several posts they might take, when our army should enter France, to retard, to incommode, to distress us in our march, and even to make a decisive stand and
to

to give us battle. I take what I say here from indisputable authority, that of the persons consulted and employed in preparing for this great distress. Had we been beaten, or had we been forced to retire towards our own frontier in the Low Countries, after penetrating into France, the hopes on which we protracted the war would have been disappointed, and, I think, the most sanguine would have then repented refusing the offers made at Gertruydenberg. But if we had beaten the French, for it was scarce lawful in those days of our presumption to suppose the contrary; would the whole monarchy of Spain have been our immediate and certain prize? Suppose, and I suppose it on good grounds, my Lord, that the French had resolved to defend their country inch by inch, and that *Lewis XIV.* had determined to retire with his court to Lyons or elsewhere, and to defend the passage of the Loire when he could no longer defend that of the Seine, rather than submit to the terms imposed on him; what should we have done in this case? Must we not have accepted such a peace as we had refused; or have protracted the war till we had conquered France first, in order to conquer Spain afterwards? Did we hope for revolutions in France? We had hoped for them in Spain: and we should have been bubbles of our hopes in both. That there was a spirit raised against the government of *Lewis XIV.* in his court, nay in his family, and that strange schemes of private ambition were formed and forming there,

I cannot doubt: and some effects of this spirit produced perhaps the greatest mortifications that he suffered in the latter part of his reign.

A light instance of this spirit is all I will quote at this time. I supped, in the year one thousand seven hundred and fifteen, at a house in France, where two * persons of no small figure, who had been in great company that night, arrived very late. The conversation turned on the events of the precedent war, and the negotiations of the late peace. In the process of the conversation, one of them † broke loose, and said, directing his discourse to me, “ Vous auriez pu nous écraser dans ce tems là: pour-quoi ne l’avez-vous pas fait?” I answered him coolly, “ Par ce que dans ce tems-là nous n’avons plus craint votre puissance.” This anecdote, too trivial for history, may find its place in a letter, and may serve to confirm what I have admitted, that there were persons even in France who expected to find their private account in the distress of their country. But these persons were a few men of wild imaginations and strong passions, more enterprising than capable, and of more name than credit. In general, the endeavours of *Lewis* XIV. and the sacrifices he offered to make in order to obtain a peace, had attached his people more than ever to him: and if *Lewis* had determined not to go farther than he had offered at Gertruydenberg, in abandoning his grandson, the French nation would

* The duke de LA FEUILLADE and MORTEMAR.

† LA FEUILLADE.

would not have abandoned him.

But to resume what I have said or hinted already ; the necessary consequences of protracting the war in order to dethrone *Philip*, from the year one thousand seven hundred and eleven inclusively, could be no other than these: Our design of penetrating into France might have been defeated, and have become fatal to us by a reverse of fortune: our first success might not have obliged the French to submit; and we might have had France to conquer, after we had failed in our first attempt to conquer Spain, and even in order to proceed to a second: the French might have submitted, and the Spaniards not: and whilst the former had been employed to force the latter, according to the scheme of the allies; or whilst, the latter submitting likewise, *Philip* had evacuated Spain; the high allies might have gone together by the ears about dividing the spoil, and disposing of the crown of Spain. To these issues were things brought by protracting the war; by refusing to make peace, on the principles of the grand alliance at worst, in one thousand seven hundred and six; and by refusing to grant it, even on those of the new plan, in one thousand seven hundred and ten. Such contingent events as I have mentioned stood in prospect before us. The end of the war was removed out of sight; and they who clamoured rather than argued for the continuation of it, contented themselves to affirm, that France was not enough reduced, and that no peace ought to be made as long as a prince

of the house of Bourbon remained on the Spanish throne. When they would think France enough reduced, it was impossible to guess. Whether they intended to join the Imperial and Spanish crowns on the head of *Charles*, who had declared his irrevocable resolution to continue the war till the conditions insisted upon at Gertruydenberg were obtained: whether they intended to bestow Spain and the Indies on some other prince: and how this great alteration in their own plan should be effected by common consent: how possession should be given to *Charles*, or to any other prince, not only of Spain but of all the Spanish dominions out of Europe, where the attachment to *Philip* was at least as strong as in Castile, and where it would not be so easy, the distance and extent of these dominions considered, to oblige the Spaniards to submit to another government: These points, and many more equally necessary to be determined, and equally difficult to prepare, were neither determined nor prepared; so that we were reduced to carry on the war, after the death of the emperor *Joseph*, without any positive scheme agreed to, as the scheme of the future peace, by the allies. That of the grand alliance we had long before renounced. That of the new plan was become ineligible; and, if it had been eligible, it would have been impracticable, because of the division it would have created among the allies themselves; several of whom would not have consented, notwithstanding his irrevocable resolution, that the emperor should
be

be king of Spain. I know not what part the protractors of the war, in the depth of their policy, intended to take. Our nation had contributed, and acted so long under the direction of their councils, for the grandeur of the house of Austria, like one of the hereditary kingdoms usurped by that family, that it is lawful to think their intention might be to unite the Imperial and Spanish crowns. But I rather think they had no very determinate view, beyond that of continuing the war as long as they could. The late lord *Oxford* told me, that my lord *Somers* being pressed, I know not on what occasion nor by whom, on the unnecessary and ruinous continuation of the war; instead of giving reasons to shew the necessity of it, contented himself to reply, that he had been bred up in a hatred of France. This was a strange reply for a wise man: and yet I know not whether he could have given a better then, or whether any of his pupils could give a better now.

The whig party in general acquired great and just popularity in the reign of our *Charles II.* by the clamour they raised against the conduct of that prince in foreign affairs. They who succeeded to the name rather than the principles of this party, after the revolution, and who have had the administration of the government in their hands with very little interruption ever since, pretending to act on the same principle, have run into an extreme as vicious and as contrary to all the rules of good policy, as that

which their predecessors exclaimed against. The old whigs complained of the inglorious figure we made, whilst our court was the bubble, and our king the pensioner, of France; and insisted that the growing ambition and power of *Lewis XIV.* should be opposed in time. The modern whigs boasted, and still boast, of the glorious figure we made, whilst we reduced ourselves by their councils, and under their administrations, to be the bubbles of our pensioners, that is of our allies; and whilst we measured our efforts in war, and the continuation of them, without any regard to the interests and abilities of our own country; without a just and sober regard, such an one as contemplates objects in their true light and sees them in their true magnitude, to the general system of power in Europe; and, in short, with a principal regard merely to particular interests at home and abroad. I say at home and abroad; because it is not less true, that they have sacrificed the wealth of their country to the forming and maintaining a party at home, than that they have done so to the forming and maintaining, beyond all pretences of necessity, alliances abroad. These general assertions may be easily justified without having recourse to private anecdotes, as your Lordship will find when you consider the whole series of our conduct in the two wars; in that which preceded, and that which succeeded immediately the beginning of the present century, but above all the last of them. In the administrations that preceded the revolution, trade had flourished, and our nation
had

had grown opulent: but the general interest of Europe had been too much neglected by us; and slavery, under the umbrage of prerogative, had been well nigh established among us. In those that have followed, taxes upon taxes, and debts upon debts, have been perpetually accumulated; till a small number of families have grown into immense wealth, and national beggary has been brought upon us; under the specious pretences of supporting a common cause against France, reducing her exorbitant power, and poising that of Europe more equally in the public balance: laudable designs, no doubt, as far as they were real; but such as, being converted into mere pretences, have been productive of much evil; some of which we feel and have long felt, and some will extend its consequences to our latest posterity. The reign of prerogative was short: and the evils and the dangers to which we were exposed by it, ended with it. But the reign of false and squandering policy has lasted long, it lasts still, and will finally complete our ruin. Beggary has been the consequence of slavery in some countries: slavery will be probably the consequence of beggary in ours; and if it is so, we know at whose door to lay it. If we had finished the war in one thousand seven hundred and six, we should have reconciled, like a wise people, our foreign and our domestic interests as nearly as possible; we should have secured the former sufficiently, and not have sacrificed the latter as entirely as we did by the prosecution of the war afterwards.

You will not be able to see without astonishment, how the charge of the war increased yearly upon us from the beginning of it; nor how immense a sum we paid in the course of it to supply the deficiencies of our confederates. Your astonishment, and indignation too, will increase, when you come to compare the progress that was made from the year one thousand seven hundred and six exclusively, with the expence of more than thirty millions, I do not exaggerate though I write upon memory, that this progress cost us, to the year one thousand seven hundred and eleven inclusively. Upon this view, your Lordship will be persuaded that it was high time to take the resolution of making peace, when the queen thought fit to change her ministry, towards the end of the year one thousand seven hundred and ten. It was high time indeed to save our country from absolute insolvency and bankruptcy, by putting an end to a scheme of conduct, which the prejudices of a party, the whimsy of some particular men, the private interest of more, and the ambition and avarice of our allies, who had been invited as it were to a scramble by the preliminaries of one thousand seven hundred and nine, alone maintained. The persons, therefore, who came into power at this time, hearkened, and they did well to hearken, to the first overtures that were made them. The disposition of their enemies invited them to do so: but that of their friends, and that of a party at home who had nursed and been nursed by the war, might have deterred

red

red them from it; for the difficulties and dangers, to which they must be exposed in carrying forward this great work, could escape none of them. In a letter to a friend it may be allowed me to say, that they did not escape me; and that I foresaw, as contingent but not improbable events, a good part of what has happened to me since. Though it was a duty, therefore, that we owed to our country, to deliver her from the necessity of bearing any longer so unequal a part in so unnecessary a war, yet was there some degree of merit in performing it. I think so strongly in this manner, I am so incorrigible, my Lord, that if I could be placed in the same circumstances again, I would take the same resolution, and act the same part. Age and experience might enable me to act with more ability, and greater skill; but all I have suffered since the death of the queen should not hinder me from acting. Notwithstanding this, I shall not be surpris'd if you think that the peace of Utrecht was not answerable to the success of the war, nor to the efforts made in it. I think so myself; and have always owned, even when it was making and made, that I thought so. Since we had committed a successful folly, we ought to have reaped more advantage from it than we did: and, whether we had left *Philip*, or placed another prince on the throne of Spain, we ought to have reduced the power of France, and to have strengthened her neighbours, much more than we did. We ought to have reduced her power for generations to come, and not to have

con-

contented ourselves with a momentary reduction of it. France was exhausted to a great degree of men and money, and her government had no credit: but they, who took this for a sufficient reduction of her power, looked but a little way before them, and reasoned too superficially. Several such there were however; for as it has been said, that there is no extravagancy which some philosopher or other has not maintained, so your experience, young as you are, must have shewn you, that there is no absurd extreme into which our party-politicians of Great Britain are not prone to fall concerning the state and conduct of public affairs. But if France was exhausted, so were we, and so were the Dutch. Famine rendered her condition much more miserable than ours, at one time, in appearance and in reality too. But as soon as this accident, that had distressed the French and frightened *Lewis XIV.* to the utmost degree, and the immediate consequences of it were over; it was obvious to observe, though few made the observation, that whilst we were unable to raise in a year, by some millions at least, the expences of the year, the French were willing and able to bear the imposition of the tenth over and above all the other taxes that had been laid upon them. This observation had the weight it deserved; and sure it deserved to have some among those who made it, at the time spoken of, and who did not think that the war ought to be continued as long as a parliament could be prevailed on to vote money. But supposing it to have deserved
none,

none, supposing the power of France to have been reduced as low as you please with respect to her inward state; yet still I affirm, that such a reduction could not be permanent, and was not therefore sufficient. Whoever knows the nature of her government, the temper of her people, and the natural advantages she has in commerce over all the nations that surround her, knows that an arbitrary government, and the temper of her people, enable her on particular occasions to throw off a load of debt much more easily, and with consequences much less to be feared, than any of her neighbours can: that although, in the general course of things, trade be cramped and industry vexed by this arbitrary government, yet neither one nor the other is oppressed; and the temper of the people, and the natural advantages of the country, are such, that how great soever her distress be at any point of time, twenty years of tranquillity suffice to re-establish her affairs, and to enrich her again at the expence of all the nations of Europe. If any one doubts of this, let him consider the condition in which this kingdom was left by *Lewis XIV.* the strange pranks the late duke of *Orleans* played, during his regency and administration, with the whole system of public revenue, and private property; and then let him tell himself, that the revenues of France, the tenth taken off, exceed all the expences of her government by many millions of livres already, and will exceed them by many more in another year.

Upon the whole matter, my Lord, the low
and

and exhausted state to which France was reduced by the last great war, was but a momentary reduction of her power: and whatever real and more lasting reduction the treaty of Utrecht brought about in some instances, it was not sufficient. The power of France would not have appeared as great as it did, when England and Holland armed themselves and armed all Germany against her, if she had lain as open to the invasions of her enemies, as her enemies lay to her's. Her inward strength was great; but the strength of those frontiers which *Lewis XIV.* was almost forty years in forming, and which the folly of all his neighbours in their turns suffered him to form, made this strength as formidable as it became. The true reduction of the exorbitant power of France, I take no notice of chimerical projects about changing her government, consisted therefore in disarming her frontiers, and fortifying the barriers against her, by the cession and demolition of many more places than she yielded up at Utrecht; but not of more than she might have been obliged to sacrifice to her own immediate relief, and to the future security of her neighbours. That she was not obliged to make these sacrifices, I affirm was owing solely to those who opposed the peace: and I am willing to put my whole credit with your Lordship, and the whole merits of a cause that has been so much contested, on this issue. I say a cause that has been so much contested; for in truth, I think, it is no longer a doubt any where, except in British pamphlets, whether the
the

the conduct of those who neither declined treating, as was done in one thousand seven hundred and six; nor pretended to treat without a design of concluding, as was done in one thousand seven hundred and nine and ten, but carried the great work of the peace forward to its consummation; or the conduct of those who opposed this work in every step of its progress, saved the power of France from a greater and a sufficient reduction at the treaty of Utrecht. The very ministers, who were employed in this fatal opposition, are obliged to confess this truth. How should they deny it? Those of Vienna may complain that the emperor had not the entire Spanish monarchy, or those of Holland that the States were not made masters directly and indirectly of the whole Low Countries. But neither they, nor any one else that has any sense of shame about him, can deny that the late queen, though she was resolved to retreat because she was resolved to finish the war, yet was to the utmost degree desirous to treat in a perfect union with her allies, and to procure them all the reasonable terms they could expect; and much better than those they reduced themselves to the necessity of accepting, by endeavouring to wrest the negotiation out of her hands. The disunion of the allies gave France the advantages she improved. The sole question is, Who caused this disunion? and that will be easily decided by every impartial man, who informs himself carefully of the public anecdotes of that time. If the private anecdotes

dotes were to be laid open as well as those, and I think it almost time they should, the whole monstrous scene would appear, and shock the eye of every honest man. I do not intend to descend into many particulars at this time: but whenever I, or any other person as well informed as I, shall descend into a full deduction of such particulars, it will become undeniably evident, that the most violent opposition imaginable, carried on by the Germans and the Dutch in league with a party in Britain, began as soon as the first overtures were made to the queen; before she had so much as begun to treat: and was therefore an opposition not to this or that plan of treaty, but in truth to all treaty; and especially to one wherein Great Britain took the lead, or was to have any particular advantage. That the Imperialists meant no treaty, unless a preliminary and impracticable condition of it was to set the crown of Spain on the emperor's head, will appear from this; that Prince *Eugene*, when he came into England, long after the death of *Joseph* and elevation of *Charles*, upon an errand most unworthy of so great a man, treated always on this supposition: and I remember with how much inward impatience I assisted at conferences held with him concerning quotas for renewing the war in Spain, in the very same room, at the cockpit, where the queen's ministers had been told in plain terms, a little before, by those of other allies, "that their masters would not consent
" that the Imperial and Spanish crowns should
" unite

“ unite on the same head.” That the Dutch were not averſe to all treaty, but meant none wherein Great Britain was to have any particular advantage, will appear from this; that their miniſter declared himſelf ready and authoriſed to ſtop the oppoſition made to the queen’s meaſures, by preſenting a memorial, wherein he would declare, “ that his maſters entered into
“ them, and were reſolved not to continue the
“ war for the recovery of Spain, provided the
“ queen would conſent that they ſhould garri-
“ ſon Gibraltar and Portmahon jointly with us,
“ and ſhare equally the Aſſiento, the South
“ Sea ſhip, and whatever ſhould be granted by
“ the Spaniards to the queen and her ſubjects.”

That the whigs engaged in this league with foreign powers againſt their country, as well as their queen, and with a phrenſy more unaccountable than that which made and maintained the ſolemn league and covenant formerly, will appear from this; that their attempts were directed not only to wreſt the negotiations out of the queen’s hands, but to oblige their country to carry on the war, on the ſame unequal foot that had coſt her already about twenty millions more than ſhe ought to have contributed to it. For they not only continued to abet the emperor, whoſe inability to ſupply his quota was confeſſed; but the Dutch likewiſe, after the States had reſuſed to ratify the treaty their miniſter ſigned at London towards the end of the year one thouſand ſeven hundred and eleven, and by which the queen united herſelf
more

more closely than ever to them; engaging to pursue the war, to conclude the peace, and to guaranty it, when concluded, jointly with them; “ provided they would keep the engagements “ they had taken with her, and the conditions “ of proportionate expence under which our “ nation had entered into the war.” Upon such schemes as these was the opposition to the treaty of Utrecht carried on: and the means employed, and the means projected to be employed, were worthy of such schemes; open, direct, and indecent defiance of legal authority, secret conspiracies against the state, and base machinations against particular men, who had no other crime than that of endeavouring to conclude a war, under the authority of the queen, which a party in the nation endeavoured to prolong, against her authority. Had the good policy of concluding the war been doubtful, it was certainly as lawful for those who thought it good, to advise it, as it had been for those, who thought it bad, to advise the contrary; and the decision of the sovereign on the throne ought to have terminated the contest. But he who had judged by the appearances of things on one side, at that time, would have been apt to think, that putting an end to the war, or to Magna Charta, was the same thing; that the queen on the throne had no right to govern independently of her successor; nor any of her subjects a right to administer the government under her, tho’ called to it by her, except those whom she had thought fit to lay aside. Extravagant as these principles are

are, no other could justify the conduct held at that time by those who opposed the peace: and as I said just now, that the phrensy of this league was more unaccountable than that of the solemn league and covenant, I might have added, that it was not very many degrees less criminal. Some of those, who charged the queen's ministers, after her death, with imaginary treasons, had been guilty during her life of real treasons: and I can compare the folly and violence of the spirit that prevailed at that time, both before the conclusion of the peace, and, under pretence of danger to the succession, after it, to nothing more nearly than to the folly and violence of the spirit that seized the tories soon after the accession of *George I.* The latter indeed, which was provoked by unjust and impolitic persecution, broke out in open rebellion. The former might have done so, if the queen had lived a little longer. But to return.

The obstinate adherence of the Dutch to this league, in opposition to the queen, rendered the conferences of Utrecht, when they were opened, no better than mock conferences. Had the men who governed that commonwealth been wise and honest enough to unite, at least then, cordially with the queen, and, since they could not hinder a congress, to act in concert with her in it; we should have been still in time to maintain a sufficient union among the allies, and a sufficient superiority over the French. All the specific demands that the former made, as well as the Dutch themselves, either to incum-

ber the negotiation, or to have in reserve, according to the artifice usually employed on such occasions, certain points from which to depart in the course of it with advantage, would not have been obtained: but all the essential demands, all in particular that were really necessary to secure the barriers in the Low Countries and of the four circles against France, would have been so. For France must have continued, in this case, rather to sue for peace, than to treat on an equal foot. The first Dauphin, son of *Lewis XIV.* died several months before this congress began: the second Dauphin, his grandson, and the wife and the eldest son of this prince, died soon after it began, of the same unknown distemper, and were buried together in the same grave. Such family misfortunes, following a long series of national misfortunes, made the old king, though he bore them with such seeming magnanimity, desirous to get out of the war at any tolerable rate, that he might not run the risque of leaving a child of five years old, the present king, engaged in it. The queen did all that was morally possible, except giving up her honour in the negotiation, and the interests of her subjects in the conditions of peace, to procure this union with the States General. But all she could do was vain; and the same phrensy, that had hindered the Dutch from improving to their and to the common advantage the public misfortunes of France, hindered them from improving to the same purposes the private misfortunes of the house of Bourbon.

Bourbon. They continued to flatter themselves that they should force the queen out of her measures, by their intrigues with the party in Britain who opposed these measures, and even raise an insurrection against her. But these intrigues, and those of Prince *Eugene*, were known and disappointed; and Monsieur *Buys* had the mortification to be reproached with them publicly, when he came to take leave of the Lords of the Council, by the Earl of *Oxford*; who entered into many particulars that could not be denied, of the private transactions of this sort, to which *Buys* had been a party, in compliance with his instructions, and, as I believe, much against his own sense and inclinations. As the season for taking the field advanced, the league proposed to defeat the success of the congress by the events of the campaign. But, instead of defeating the success of the congress, the events of the campaign served only to turn this success in favour of France. At the beginning of the year, the queen and the States, in concert, might have given the law to friend and foe, with great advantage to the former; and with such a detriment to the latter, as the causes of the war rendered just, the events of it reasonable, and the objects of it necessary. At the end of the year, the allies were no longer in a state of giving, nor the French of receiving, the law; and the Dutch had recourse to the queen's good offices, when they could oppose and durst insult her no longer. Even then, these offices

were employed with zeal, and with some effect, for them.

Thus the war ended, much more favourably to France than she expected, or they who put an end to it designed. The queen would have humbled and weakened this power. The allies who opposed her would have crushed it, and have raised another as exorbitant on the ruins of it. Neither one nor the other succeeded; and they who meant to ruin the French power preserved it, by opposing those who meant to reduce it.

Since I have mentioned the events of the year one thousand seven hundred and twelve, and the decisive turn they gave to the negotiations in favour of France, give me leave to say something more on this subject. You will find that I shall do so with much impartiality. The disastrous events of this campaign in the Low Countries, and the consequences of them, have been imputed to the separation of the British troops from the army of the allies. The clamour against this measure was great at that time, and the prejudices which this clamour raised are great still among some men. But as clamour raised these prejudices, other prejudices gave birth to this clamour: and it is no wonder they should do so among persons bent on continuing the war; since I own very freely, that when the first step that led to this separation came to my knowledge, which was not an hour, by the way, before I writ by the queen's order to the Duke of *Ormond*, in the very words in which the order

was

was advised and given, “ that he should not engage in any siege, nor hazard a battle, till “ further order,” I was surpris’d and hurt. So much, that if I had had an opportunity of speaking in private to the queen, after I had received Monsieur *De Torcy*’s letter to me on the subject, and before she went into the council, I should have spoken to her, I think, in the first heat against it. The truth is, however, that the step was justifiable at that point of time in every respect; and, therefore, that the consequences are to be charged to the account of those who drew them on themselves, not to the account of the queen, nor of the minister who advised her. The step was justifiable to the allies surely, since the queen took no more upon her, no not so much by far, in making it, as many of them had done by suspending, or endangering, or defeating operations in the heat of the war, when they declined to send their troops, or delayed the march of them, or neglected the preparations they were obliged to make, on the most frivolous pretences. Your Lordship will find in the course of your inquiries, many particular instances of what is here pointed out in general. But I cannot help descending into some few of those that regard the Emperor and the States General, who cried the loudest and with the most effect, though they had the least reason on account of their own conduct, to complain of the queen’s. With what face could the emperor, for instance, presume to complain of the orders sent to the Duke of *Ormond*? I say nothing

of his deficiencies, which were so great, that he had at this very time little more than one regiment that could be said properly to act against France and Spain at his sole charge; as I affirmed to Prince *Eugene* before the Lords of the Council, and demonstrated upon paper the next day. I say nothing of all that preceded the year one thousand seven hundred and seven, on which I should have much to say. But I desire your Lordship only to consider, what you will find to have passed after the famous year one thousand seven hundred and six. Was it with the queen's approbation, or against her will, that the emperor made the treaty for the evacuation of Lombardy, and let out so great a number of French regiments time enough to recruit themselves at home, to march into Spain, and to destroy the British forces at Almanza? Was it with her approbation, or against her will, that, instead of employing all his forces and all his endeavours, to make the greatest design of the whole war, the enterprize on Toulon, succeed, he detached twelve thousand men to reduce the kingdom of Naples, that must have fallen of course? and that an opportunity of ruining the whole maritime force of France, and of ruining or subduing her provinces on that side, was lost, merely by this unnecessary diversion, and the conduct of Prince *Eugene*, which left no room to doubt that he gave occasion to this fatal disappointment on purpose, and in concert with the court of Vienna?

Turn your eyes, my Lord, on the conduct of the States, and you will find reason to be astonished

nished at the arrogance of the men who governed in them at this time, and who presumed to exclaim against a queen of Great Britain, for doing what their deputies had done more than once in that very country, and in the course of that very war. In the year one thousand seven hundred and twelve, at the latter end of a war, when conferences for treating a peace were opened, when the least sinister event in the field would take off from that superiority which the allies had in the congress, and when the past success of the war had already given them as much of this superiority as they wanted to obtain a safe, advantageous, honourable, and lasting peace, the queen directed her general to suspend till further order the operations of her troops. In one thousand seven hundred and three, in the beginning of a war, when something was to be risked or no success to be expected, and when the bad situation of affairs in Germany and Italy required, in a particular manner, that efforts should be made in the Low Countries, and that the war should not languish there whilst it was unsuccessful every where else; the Duke of *Marlborough* determined to attack the French: but the Dutch deputies would not suffer their troops to go on; defeated his design in the very moment of its execution, if I remember well; and gave no other reason for their proceeding, than that which is a reason against every battle, the possibility of being beaten. The circumstance of proximity to their frontier was urged, I know; and it was said, that their provinces would be

exposed to the incursions of the French if they lost the battle. But besides other answers to this vain pretence, it was obvious that they had ventured battles as near home as this would have been fought, and that the way to remove the enemy farther off, was by action, not inaction. Upon the whole matter; the Dutch deputies stopped the progress of the confederate army at this time, by exercising an arbitrary and independent authority over the troops of the States. In one thousand seven hundred and five, when the success of the preceding campaign should have given them an entire confidence in the Duke of *Marlborough's* conduct, when returning from the Moselle to the Low Countries he began to make himself and the common cause amends for the disappointment which pique and jealousy in the Prince of *Baden*, or usual sloth and negligence in the Germans, had occasioned just before, by forcing the French lines; when he was in the full pursuit of this advantage, and when he was marching to attack an enemy half defeated, and more than half-dispirited; nay, when he had made his dispositions for attacking, and part of his troops had passed the Dyle---the deputies of the States once more tied up his hands, took from him an opportunity too fair to be lost; for these, I think, were some of the terms of his complaint: and in short, the confederacy received an affront at least, where we might have obtained a victory. Let this that has been said, serve as a specimen of the independency on the queen, her councils, and her generals,

nerals, with which these powers acted in the course of the war; who were not ashamed to find fault that the queen, once, and at the latter end of it, presumed to suspend the operations of her troops till farther order. But be it that they foresaw what this farther order would be. They foresaw then, that as soon as Dunkirk should be put into the queen's hands, she would consent to a suspension of arms for two months, and invite them to do the same. Neither this foresight, nor the strong declaration which the Bishop of *Bristol* made by the queen's order at Utrecht, and which shewed them that her resolution was not taken to submit to the league into which they had entered against her, could prevail on them to make a right use of these two months, by endeavouring to renew their union and good understanding with the queen; tho' I can say with the greatest truth, and they could not doubt of it at the time, that she would have gone more than half-way to meet them, and that her ministers would have done their utmost to bring it about. Even then we might have resumed the superiority we began to lose in the congress; for, the Queen and the States uniting, the principal allies would have united with them: and, in this case, it would have been so much the interest of France to avoid any chance of seeing the war renewed, that she must, and she would, have made sure of peace during the suspension, on much worse terms for herself and for Spain than she made it afterwards. But the prudent and sober States continued to act like
froward

froward children, or like men drunk with resentment and passion; and such will the conduct be of the wisest governments in every circumstance where a spirit of faction and of private interest prevails, among those who are at the head, over reasons of state. After laying aside all decency in their behaviour towards the queen, they laid aside all caution for themselves. They declared “they would carry on the war without her.” Landrecy seemed, in their esteem, of more importance than Dunkirk; and the opportunity of wasting some French provinces, or of putting the whole event of the war on the decision of another battle, preferable to the other measure that lay open to them; that, I mean, of trying in good earnest, and in an honest concert with the queen, during the suspension of arms, whether such terms of peace as ought to satisfy them and the other allies might not be imposed on France.

If the confederate army had broke into France the campaign before this, or in any former campaign; and if the Germans and the Dutch had exercised then the same inhumanity as the French had exercised in their provinces in former wars; if they had burnt Versailles, and even Paris; and if they had disturbed the ashes of the dead princes that repose at Saint Dennis; every good man would have felt the horror that such cruelties inspire: no man could have said that the retaliation was unjust. But in one thousand seven hundred and twelve, it was too late in every respect to meditate such projects. If the
French

French had been unprepared to defend their frontier, either for want of means, or in a vain confidence that the peace would be made, as our king *Charles II.* was unprepared to defend his coast at the latter end of his first war with Holland, the allies might have played a sure game in satisfying their vengeance on the French, as the Dutch did on us in one thousand six hundred and sixty-seven; and imposing harder terms on them, than those they offered, or would have accepted. But this was not the case. The French army was, I believe, more numerous than the army of the allies, even before separation, and certainly in a much better condition than two or three years before, when a deluge of blood was spilt to dislodge them, for we did no more at Malplaquet. Would the Germans and the Dutch have found it more easy to force them at this time, than it was at that? Would not the French have fought with as much obstinacy to save Paris, as they did to save Mons? and, with all the regard due to the Duke of *Ormond* and to Prince *Eugene*, was the absence of the Duke of *Marlborough* of no consequence? Turn this affair every way in your thoughts, my Lord, and you will find that the Germans and the Dutch had nothing in theirs, but to break, at any rate, and at any risque, the negotiations that were begun; and to reduce Great Britain to the necessity of continuing, what she had been too long, a province of the confederacy. A province indeed, and not one of the best treated: since the confederates assumed a right of obliging her to

to

to keep her pacts with them, and of dispensing with their obligations to her; of exhausting her, without rule, or proportion, or measure, in the support of a war, to which she alone contributed more than all of them, and in which she had no longer any immediate interest, nor even any remote interest that was not common, or, with respect to her, very dubious; and, after all this, of complaining that the queen presumed to hearken to overtures of peace, and to set a negotiation on foot, whilst their humour and ambition required that the war should be prolonged for an indefinite time, and for a purpose that was either bad or indeterminate.

The suspension of arms, that began in the Low Countries, was continued, and extended afterwards by the act I signed at Fontainebleau. The fortune of the war turned at the same time: and all those disgraces followed, which obliged the Dutch to treat, and to desire the assistance of the queen, whom they had set at defiance so lately. This assistance they had, as effectually as it could be given in the circumstances to which they had reduced themselves and the whole alliance: and the peace of Great Britain, Portugal, Savoy, Prussia, and the States General, was made, without his Imperial Majesty's concurrence, in the spring of one thousand seven hundred and thirteen; as it might have been made, much more advantageously for them all, in that of one thousand seven hundred and twelve. Less obstinacy on the part of the States, and perhaps more decisive resolutions on the part of the Queen,

queen, would have wound up all these divided threads in one, and have finished this great work much sooner and better. I say, perhaps more decisive resolutions on the part of the Queen; because, although I think that I should have conveyed her orders for signing a treaty of peace with France, before the armies took the field, much more willingly than I executed them afterwards in signing that of the cessation of arms; yet I do not presume to decide; but shall desire your Lordship to do so, on a review of all circumstances, some of which I shall just mention.

The league made for protracting the war having opposed the queen to the utmost of their power, and by means of every sort, from the first appearances of a negotiation; the general effect of this violent opposition on her and her ministers was, to make them proceed by slower and more cautious steps: the particular effect of it was, to oblige them to open the eyes of the nation, and to inflame the people with a desire of peace, by shewing, in the most public and solemn manner, how unequally we were burdened, and how unfairly we were treated by our allies. The first gave an air of diffidence and timidity to their conduct, which encouraged the league, and gave vigour to the opposition. The second irritated the Dutch particularly; for the emperor and the other allies had the modesty at least, not to pretend to bear any proportion in the expence of the war: and thus the two powers, whose union was the most essential, were the most at variance; and the
queen

queen was obliged to act in a closer concert with her enemy who desired peace, than she would have done if her allies had been less obstinately bent to protract the war. During these transactions, my Lord *Oxford*, who had his correspondencies apart, and a private thread of negotiation always in his hands, entertained hopes that *Philip* would be brought to abandon Spain in favour of his father-in-law, and to content himself with the states of that prince, the kingdom of Sicily, and the preservation of his right of succession to the crown of France. Whether my Lord had any particular reasons for entertaining these hopes, besides the general reasons founded on the condition of France, on that of the Bourbon family, and on the disposition of *Lewis XIV.* I doubt very much. That *Lewis*, who fought and had need of seeking peace, almost at any rate, and who saw that he could not obtain it, even of the queen, unless *Philip* abandoned immediately the crown of Spain, or abandoned immediately, by renunciation and a solemn act of exclusion, all pretension to that of France; that *Lewis* was desirous of the former, I cannot doubt. That *Philip* would have abandoned Spain with the equivalents that have been mentioned, or either of them, I believe likewise; if the present king of *France* had died, when his father, mother, and eldest brother did: for they all had the same distemper. But *Lewis* would use no violent means to force his grandson; the queen would not continue the war to force him; *Philip* was too obstinate, and his wife

wife too ambitious, to quit the crown of Spain, when they had discovered our weakness, and felt their own strength in that country, by their success in the campaign of one thousand seven hundred and ten: after which my Lord *Stanhope* himself was convinced that Spain could not be conquered, nor kept if it was conquered, without a much greater army than it was possible for us to send thither. In that situation it was wild to imagine, as the earl of *Oxford* imagined, or pretended to imagine, that they would quit the crown of Spain, for a remote and uncertain prospect of succeeding to that of France, and content themselves to be in the mean time princes of very small dominions. *Philip* therefore, after struggling long that he might not be obliged to make his opinion till the succession of France lay open to him, was obliged to make it, and made it, for Spain. Now this, my Lord, was the very crisis of the negotiation: and to this point I apply what I said above of the effect of more decisive resolutions on the part of the queen. It was plain, that if she made the campaign in concert with her allies, she could be no longer mistress of the negotiations, nor have almost a chance for conducting them to the issue she proposed. Our ill success in the field would have rendered the French less tractable in the congress: our good success there would have rendered the allies so. On this principle the queen suspended the operations of her troops, and then concluded the cessation.

Compare now the appearances and effect of
this

this measure, with the appearances and effect that another measure would have had. In order to arrive at any peace, it was necessary to do what the queen did, or to do more: and, in order to arrive at a good one, it was necessary to be prepared to carry on the war, as well as to make a shew of it; for she had the hard task upon her, of guarding against her allies and her enemies both. But in that ferment, when few men considered any thing coolly, the conduct of her general, after he took the field, though he covered the allies in the siege of *Quefnoy*, corresponded ill, in appearance, with the declarations of carrying on the war vigorously, that had been made, on several occasions, before the campaign opened. It had an air of double dealing; and as such it passed among those who did not combine in their thoughts all the circumstances of the conjuncture, or who were infatuated with the notional necessity of continuing the war. The clamour could not have been greater, if the queen had signed her peace separately: and, I think, the appearances might have been explained as favourably in one case as in the other. From the death of the emperor *Joseph*, it was neither our interest, nor the common interest, well understood, to set the crown of Spain on the present emperor's head. As soon therefore as *Philip* had made his option; and if she had taken this resolution early, his option would have been sooner made; I presume that the queen might have declared, that she would not continue the
war

war an hour longer to procure Spain for his Imperial Majesty ; that the engagements, she had taken whilst he was archduke, bound her no more ; that, by his accession to the empire, the very nature of them was altered ; that she took effectual measures to prevent, in any future time, an union of the crowns of France and Spain, and, upon the same principle, would not consent, much less fight, to bring about an immediate union of the Imperial and Spanish crowns ; that they, who insisted to protract the war, intended this union ; that they could intend nothing else, since they ventured to break with her, rather than to treat, and were so eager to put the reasonable satisfaction, that they might have in every other case without hazard, on the uncertain events of war ; that she would not be imposed on any longer in this manner ; and that she had ordered her ministers to sign her treaty with France, on the surrender of Dunkirk into her hands ; that she pretended not to prescribe to her allies, but that she had insisted, in their behalf, on certain conditions, that France was obliged to grant to those of them who should sign their treaties at the same time as she did, or who should consent to an immediate cessation of arms, and during the cessation treat under her mediation. There had been more frankness and more dignity in this proceeding, and the effect must have been more advantageous. France would have granted more for a separate peace, than for a cessation : and the Dutch would have been more

influenced by the prospect of one, than of the other: especially since this proceeding would have been very different from theirs at Munster, and at Nimeghen, where they abandoned their allies, without any other pretence than the particular advantage they found in doing so. A suspension of the operations of the queen's troops, nay a cessation of arms between her and France, was not definitive; and they might, and they did, hope to drag her back under their, and the German yoke. This therefore was not sufficient to check their obstinacy, nor to hinder them from making all the unfortunate haste they did make to get themselves beaten at Denain. But they would possibly have laid aside their vain hopes, if they had seen the queen's ministers ready to sign her treaty of peace, and those of some principal allies ready to sign at the same time; in which case the mischief that followed had been prevented, and better terms of peace had been obtained for the confederacy: a prince of the house of Bourbon, who could never be king of France, would have sat on the Spanish throne, instead of an emperor: the Spanish sceptre would have been weakened in the hands of one, and the Imperial sceptre would have been strengthened in those of the other: France would have had no opportunity of recovering from former blows, nor of finishing a long unsuccessful war by two successful campaigns: her ambition, and her power, would have declined with her old king, and under the minority that followed: one of them at least might

might have been so reduced by the terms of peace, if the defeat of the allies in one thousand seven hundred and twelve, and the loss of so many towns as the French took in that and the following year, had been prevented, that the other would have been no longer formidable, even supposing it to have continued; whereas I suppose that the tranquillity of Europe is more due, at this time, to want of ambition, than to want of power on the part of France. But, to carry the comparison of these two measures to the end, it may be supposed that the Dutch would have taken the same part, on the queen's declaring a separate peace, as they took on her declaring a cessation. The preparations for the campaign in the Low Countries were made; the Dutch, like the other confederates, had a just confidence in their own troops, and an unjust contempt for those of the enemy; they were transported from their usual sobriety and caution by the ambitious prospect of large acquisitions, which had been opened artfully to them; the rest of the confederate army was composed of Imperial and German troops: so that the Dutch, the Imperialists, and the other Germans, having an interest to decide which was no longer the interest of the whole confederacy, they might have united against the queen in one case, as they did in the other; and the mischief that followed to them and the common cause, might not have been prevented. This might have been the case, no doubt. They might have flattered themselves that they should be able to break in-

to France, and to force *Philip*, by the distress brought on his grandfather, to resign the crown of Spain to the emperor, even after Great Britain, and Portugal, and Savoy too perhaps, were drawn out of the war; for these princes desired as little as the queen to see the Spanish crown on the emperor's head. But, even in this case, though the madness would have been greater, the effect would not have been worse. The queen would have been able to serve these confederates as well by being mediator in the negotiations, as they left it in her power to do by being a party in them: and Great Britain would have had the advantage of being delivered so much sooner from a burden, which whimsical and wicked politics had imposed, and continued upon her till it was become intolerable. Of these two measures, at the time when we might have taken either, there were persons who thought the last preferable to the former. But it never came into public debate. Indeed it never could; too much time having been lost in waiting for the option of *Philip*, and the suspension and cessation having been brought before the council rather as a measure taken, than a matter to be debated. If your Lordship, or any one else, should judge, that, in such circumstances as those of the confederacy in the beginning of one thousand seven hundred and twelve, the latter measure ought to have been taken, and the Gordian knot to have been cut, rather than to suffer a mock treaty to languish on, with so much advantage to the French as the disunion of the allies

lies gave them: in short, if slowness, perplexity, inconsistency, and indecision, should be objected, in some instances, to the queen's councils at that time: if it should be said particularly, that she did not observe the precise moment when the conduct of the league formed against her, being exposed to mankind, would have justified any part she should have taken (though she declared, soon after the moment was passed, that this conduct had set her free from all her engagements); and when she ought to have taken that of drawing, by one bold measure, her allies out of the war, or herself out of the confederacy, before she lost her influence on France: if all this should be objected, yet would the proofs brought to support these objections shew, that we were better allies than politicians; that the desire the queen had to treat in concert with her confederates, and the resolution she took not to sign without them, made her bear what no crowned head had ever borne before; and that where she erred, she erred principally by the patience, the compliance, and the condescension she exercised towards them, and towards her own subjects in league with them. Such objections as these may lie to the queen's conduct, in the course of this great affair; as well as objections of human infirmity to that of those persons employed by her in the transactions of it; from which neither those who preceded, nor those who succeeded, have, I presume, been free. But the principles on which they proceeded were honest, the means they used were

lawful, and the event they proposed to bring about was just. Whereas the very foundation of all the opposition to the peace was laid in injustice and folly: for what could be more unjust, than the attempt of the Dutch and the Germans, to force the queen to continue a war for their private interest and ambition, the disproportionate expence of which oppressed the commerce of her subjects, and loaded them with debts for ages yet to come? a war, the object of which was so changed, that from the year one thousand seven hundred and eleven she made it not only without any engagement, but against her own and the common interest? What could be more foolish; you will think that I soften the term too much, and you will be in the right to think so: what could be more foolish, than the attempt of a party in Britain, to protract a war so ruinous to their country, without any reason that they durst avow, except that of wreaking the resentments of Europe on France, and that of uniting the Imperial and Spanish crowns on an Austrian head? one of which was to purchase revenge at a price too dear; and the other was to expose the liberties of Europe to new dangers, by the conclusion of a war which had been made to assert and secure them.

I have dwelt the longer on the conduct of those who promoted, and of those who opposed, the negotiations of the peace made at Utrecht, and on the comparison of the measure pursued by the queen with that which she might have pursued; because the great benefit we ought to
reap

reap from the study of history, cannot be reaped, unless we accustom ourselves to compare the conduct of different governments, and different parties, in the same conjunctures, and to observe the measures they did pursue, and the measures they might have pursued, with the actual consequences that followed one, and the possible or probable consequences that might have followed the other. By this exercise of the mind, the study of history anticipates, as it were, experience, as I have observed in one of the first of these letters, and prepares us for action. If this consideration should not plead a sufficient excuse for my prolixity on this head, I have one more to add that may. A rage of warring possessed a party in our nation till the death of the late queen; a rage of negotiating has possessed the same party of men, ever since. You have seen the consequences of one; you see actually those of the other. The rage of warring confirmed the beggary of our nation, which began as early as the revolution; but then it gave, in the last war, reputation to our arms, and our councils too. For though I think, and must always think, that the principle on which we acted after departing from that laid down in the grand alliance of one thousand seven hundred and one, was wrong; yet must we confess that it was pursued wisely, as well as boldly. The rage of negotiating has been a chargeable rage likewise, at least as chargeable in its proportion. Far from paying our debts contracted in war, they continue much the same after three and

twenty years of peace. The taxes that oppress our mercantile interest the most, are still in mortgage; and those that oppress the landed interest the most, instead of being laid on extraordinary occasions, are become the ordinary funds for the current service of every year. This is grievous; and the more so, to any man who has the honour of his country as well as her prosperity at heart, because we have not, in this case, the airy consolation we had in the other. The rage of negotiating began twenty years ago, under pretence of consummating the treaty of Utrecht: and, from that time to this, our ministers have been in one perpetual maze. They have made themselves and us, often, objects of aversion to the powers on the continent; and we are become at last objects of contempt even to the Spaniards. What other effect could our absurd conduct have? What other return has it deserved? We came exhausted out of long wars; and, instead of pursuing the measures necessary to give us means and opportunity to repair our strength and to diminish our burdens, our ministers have acted, from that time to this, like men who sought pretences to keep the nation in the same exhausted condition, and under the same load of debt. This may have been their view perhaps; and we could not be surpris'd if we heard the same men declare national poverty necessary to support the present government, who have so frequently declared corruption and a standing army to be so. Your good sense, my Lord, your virtue, and your love of your country,

try, will always determine you to oppose such vile schemes, and to contribute your utmost towards the cure of both these kinds of rage; the rage of warring, without any proportionable interest of our own, for the ambition of others; and the rage of negotiating, on every occasion, at any rate, without a sufficient call to it, and without any part of that deciding influence which we ought to have. Our nation inhabits an island, and is one of the principal nations of Europe; but, to maintain this rank, we must take the advantages of this situation, which have been neglected by us for almost half a century: we must always remember that we are not part of the continent, but we must never forget that we are neighbours to it. I will conclude, by applying a rule that *Horace* gives for the conduct of an epic or dramatic poem, to the part Great Britain ought to take in the affairs of the continent, if you allow me to transform Britannia into a male divinity, as the verse requires:

Nec Deus interfit, nisi dignus vindice nodus
Inciderit,———

If these reflections are just, and I should not have offered them to your Lordship had they not appeared both just and important to my best understanding, you will think that I have not spent your time unprofitably in making them, and exciting you by them to examine the true interest of your country relatively to foreign affairs; and to compare it with those principles of conduct, that, I am persuaded, have no other foundation than party designs, prejudices, and habits;

habits; the private interest of some men, and the ignorance and rashness of others.

My letter is grown so long, that I shall say nothing to your Lordship, at this time, concerning the study of modern history, relatively to the interests of your country in domestic affairs; and I think there will be no need to do so at any other. The History of the Rebellion by your great grandfather, and his private memorials which your Lordship has in manuscript, will guide you surely as far as they go: where they leave you, your Lordship must not expect any history; for we have more reason to make this complaint, "*Abest enim historia literis nostris,*" than *Tully* had to put it into the mouth of *Atticus*, in his first book of laws. But where history leaves you, it is wanted least: the traditions of this century, and of the latter end of the last, are fresh. Many, who were actors in some of these events, are alive; and many who have conversed with those that were actors in others. The public is in possession of several collections and memorials, and several there are in private hands. You will want no materials to form true notions of transactions so recent. Even pamphlets, writ on different sides, and on different occasions, in our party-disputes, and histories of no more authority than pamphlets, will help you to come at truth. Read them with suspicion, my Lord; for they deserve to be suspected: pay no regard to the epithets given, nor to the judgments passed; neglect all declamation, weigh the reasoning, and advert to fact.

fact. With such precautions, even *Burnet's* history may be of some use. In a word, your Lordship will want no help of mine to discover, by what progression the whole constitution of our country, and even the character of our nation, has been altered: nor how much a worse use in a national sense, though a better in the sense of party-politics, the men called Whigs have made of long wars and new systems of revenue since the Revolution, than the men called Tories made, before it, of long peace and stale prerogative. When you look back three or four generations ago, you will see that the English were a plain, perhaps a rough, but a good-natured hospitable people, jealous of their liberties, and able as well as ready to defend them, with their tongues, their pens, and their swords. The Restoration began to turn hospitality into luxury, pleasure into debauch, and country-peers and country-commoners into courtiers and men of mode. But whilst our luxury was young, it was little more than elegance: the debauch of that age was enlivened with wit, and varnished over with gallantry. The courtiers and men of mode knew what the constitution was, respected it, and often asserted it. Arts and sciences flourished; and, if we grew more trivial, we were not become either grossly ignorant, or openly profligate. Since the Revolution, our kings have been reduced indeed to a seeming annual dependence on parliament; but the business of parliament, which was esteemed in general a duty before, has been
been

been exercised in general as a trade since. The trade of parliament, and the trade of funds, have grown universal. Men, who stood forward in the world, have attended to little else. The frequency of parliaments, that increased their importance, and should have increased the respect of them, has taken off from their dignity: and the spirit that prevailed, whilst the service in them was duty, has been debased since it became a trade. Few know, and scarce any respect, the British constitution: that of the church has been long since derided; that of the State as long neglected; and both have been left at the mercy of the men in power, whoever those men were. Thus the Church, at least the hierarchy, however sacred in its origin or wise in its institution, is become an useless burden on the State: and the State is become, under ancient and known forms, a new and undefinable monster; composed of a king without monarchical splendour, a senate of nobles without aristocratical independency, and a senate of commons without democratical freedom. In the mean time, my Lord, the very idea of wit, and all that can be called taste, has been lost among the great; arts and sciences are scarce alive; luxury has been increased, but not refined; corruption has been established, and is avowed. When governments are worn out, thus it is: the decay appears in every instance. Public and private virtue, public and private spirit, science and wit, decline all together.

That you, my Lord, may have a long and glo.

glorious share in restoring all these, and in drawing our government back to the true principles of it, I wish most heartily. Whatever errors I may have committed in public life, I have always loved my country: whatever faults may be objected to me in private life, I have always loved my friend: whatever usage I have received from my country, it shall never make me break with her: whatever usage I have received from my friends, I never shall break with one of them, while I think him a friend to my country. These are the sentiments of my heart. I know they are those of your Lordship's: and a communion of such sentiments is a tie that will engage me to be, as long as I live,

My Lord,

Your most faithful servant.

A
P L A N
F O R A
General History of EUROPE.

L E T T E R I.

I SHALL take the liberty of writing to you a little oftener than the three or four times a-year, which you tell me are all you can allow yourself to write to those you like best; and yet I declare to you with great truth, that you never knew me so busy in your life, as I am at present. You must not imagine from hence, that I am writing memoirs of myself. The subject is too slight to descend to posterity, in any other manner, than by that occasional mention which may be made of any little actor in the history of our age. *Sylla, Cæsar*, and others of that rank, were, whilst they lived, at the head of mankind: their story was in some sort the story of the world, and as such might very properly be transmitted under their names to future generations. But for those who have acted much inferior parts, if they publish the piece, and call it after their own names, they
are

are impertinent; if they publish only their own share in it, they inform mankind by halves, and neither give much instruction nor create much attention. France abounds with writers of this sort; and, I think, we fall into the other extreme. Let me tell you, on this occasion, what has sometimes come into my thoughts.

There is hardly any century in history which began by opening so great a scene, as the century wherein we live, and shall, I suppose, die. Compare it with others, even the most famous, and you will think so. I will sketch the two last, to help your memory.

The loss of that balance which *Laurence* of Medicis had preserved, during his time, in Italy; the expedition of *Charles VIII.* to Naples; the intrigues of the Duke of *Milan*, who spun, with all the refinements of art, that net wherein he was taken at last himself; the successful dexterity of *Ferdinand* the Catholic, who built one pillar of the Austrian greatness in Spain, in Italy, and in the Indies; as the succession of the house of Burgundy, joined to the Imperial dignity and the hereditary countries, established another in the upper and lower Germany: these causes, and many others, combined to form a very extraordinary conjuncture; and, by their consequences, to render the sixteenth century fruitful of great events and of astonishing revolutions.

The beginning of the seventeenth opened still a greater and more important scene. The Spanish yoke was well-nigh imposed on Italy by the famous

triumvirate, *Toledo* at Milan, *Ossuna* at Naples, and *La-Cueva* at Venice. The distractions of France, as well as the state-policy of the queen mother, seduced by Rome, and amused by Spain; the despicable character of our *James I.* the rashness of the elector Palatine, the bad intelligence of the princes and states of the league in Germany, the mercenary temper of *John George* of Saxony, and the great qualities of *Maximilian* of Bavaria, raised *Ferdinand II.* to the Imperial throne; when, the males of the elder branch of the Austrian family in Germany being extinguished at the death of *Matthias*, nothing was more desirable, nor perhaps more practicable, than to throw the empire into another house. Germany ran the same risque as Italy had done: *Ferdinand* seemed more likely, even than *Charles V.* had been, to become absolute master; and, if France had not furnished the greatest minister, and the North the greatest captain, of that age, in the same point of time, Vienna and Madrid would have given the law to the western world.

As the Austrian scale sunk, that of Bourbon rose. The true date of the rise of that power, which has made the kings of France so considerable in Europe, goes up as high as *Charles VII.* and *Lewis XI.* The weakness of our *Henry VI.* the loose conduct of *Edward IV.* and perhaps the oversights of *Henry VII.* helped very much to knit that monarchy together, as well as to enlarge it. Advantage might have been taken of the divisions which religion oc-

X

casioned;

caſioned; and ſupporting the proteſtant party in France would have kept that crown under reſtraints, and under inabilities, in ſome meaſure equal to thoſe which were occaſioned anciently by the vaſt alienations of its demefnes, and by the exorbitant power of its vaſſals. But *James I.* was incapable of thinking with ſenſe, or acting with ſpirit. *Charles I.* had an imperfect glimpe of his true intereſt, but his uxorious temper, and the extravagancy of that madman *Buckingham*, gave *Richlieu* time to finiſh a great part of his project: and the miſeries that followed in England, gave *Mazarine* time and opportunity to complete the ſyſtem. The laſt great act of this cardinal's adminiſtration was the Pyrenean treaty.

Here I would begin, by repreſenting the face of Europe ſuch as it was at that epocha, the intereſts and the conduct of England, France, Spain, Holland, and the empire. A ſummary recapitulation ſhould follow of all the ſteps taken by France, during more than twenty years, to arrive at the great object ſhe had propoſed to herſelf in making this treaty: the moſt ſolemn article of which the miniſter, who negotiated it, deſigned ſhould be violated; as appears by his letters, writ from the Iſland of Pheafants, if I miſtake not. After this, another draught of Europe ſhould have its place according to the relations which the ſeveral powers ſtood in, one towards another, in one thouſand fix hundred and eighty eight: and the alterations which the revolution in England made in the politics of

of Europe. A summary account should follow of the events of the war that ended in one thousand six hundred and ninety seven, with the different views of King *William III.* and *Lewis XIV.* in making the peace of Ryswic; which matter has been much canvassed, and is little understood. Then the dispositions made by the partition-treaties, and the influences and consequences of these treaties; and a third draught of the state of Europe at the death of *Charles II.* of Spain. All this would make the subject of one or two books, and would be the most proper introduction imaginable to an history of that war with which our century began, and of the peace which followed.

This war, foreseen for above half a century, had been, during all that time, the great and constant object of the councils of Europe. The prize to be contended for was the richest that ever had been staked, since those of the Persian and Roman empires. The union of two powers, which separately, and in opposition, had aimed at an universal monarchy, was apprehended. The confederates therefore engaged in it, to maintain a balance between the two houses of Austria and Bourbon, in order to preserve their security, and to assert their independence. But with the success of the war they changed their views: and, if ambition began it on the side of France, ambition continued it on the other. The battles, the sieges, the surprising revolutions, which happened in the course of this war, are not to be paralleled in any period of

the same compass. The motives, and the measures, by which it was protracted, the true reasons why it ended in a manner, which appeared not proportionable to its success; and the new political state into which Europe was thrown by the treaties of Utrecht and Baden, are subjects on which few persons have the necessary informations, and yet every one speaks with assurance, and even with passion. I think I could speak on them with some knowledge, and with as much indifference as *Polybius* does of the negotiations of his father *Lycortas*, even in those points where I was myself an actor.

I will even confess to you, that I should not despair of performing this part better than the former. There is nothing in my opinion so hard to execute, as those political maps, if you will allow me such an expression, and those systems of hints, rather than relations of events, which are necessary to connect and explain them; and which must be so concise, and yet so full; so complicate, and yet so clear. I know nothing of this sort well done by the ancients. *Sallust's* introduction, as well as that of *Thucydides*, might serve almost for any other piece of the Roman or Greek story, as well as for those which these two great authors chose. *Polybius* does not come up, in his introduction, to this idea neither. Among the moderns, the first book of *Machiavel's* History of Florence is a noble original of this kind: and perhaps father *Paul's* History of Benefices is, in the same kind of composition, inimitable.

These

These are a few of those thoughts, which come into my mind when I consider how incumbent it is on every man, that he should be able to give an account even of his leisure; and, in the midst of solitude, be of some use to society.

I know not whether I shall have courage enough to undertake the task I have chalked out: I distrust my abilities with reason, and I shall want several informations, not easy, I doubt, for me to obtain. But, in all events, it will not be possible for me to go about it this year; the reasons of which would be long enough to fill another letter, and I doubt that you will think this grown too bulky already.

Adieu.

OF THE
TRUE USE
OF
RETIREMENT and STUDY;

To the Right Honourable
Lord BATHURST.

LETTER II.

SINCE my last to your Lordship, this is the first favourable opportunity I have had of keeping the promise I made you. I will avoid prolixity as much as I can, in the first draught of my thoughts; but I must give you them as they rise in my mind, without staying to marshal them in close order.

As proud as we are of human reason, nothing can be more absurd than the general system of human life, and human knowledge. This faculty of distinguishing true from false, right from wrong, and what is agreeable, from what is repugnant to nature, either by one act, or by a longer process of intuition, has not been given with so sparing a hand, as many appearances would make us apt to believe. If it was cultivated, therefore, as early, and as carefully as it might

might be, and if the exercise of it was left generally as free as it ought to be, our common notions and opinions would be more consonant to truth than they are: and, truth being but one, they would be more uniform likewise.

But this rightful mistress of human life and knowledge, whose proper office it is to preside over both, and to direct us in the conduct of one and the pursuit of the other, becomes degraded in the intellectual œconomy. She is reduced to a mean and fervile state, to the vile drudgery of conniving at principles, defending opinions, and confirming habits, that are none of hers. They who do her most honour, who consult her ofteneft, and obey her too very often, are still guilty of limiting her authority according to maxims, and rules, and schemes, that chance, or ignorance, or interest, first devised; and that custom sanctifies: custom, that result of the passions and prejudices of many, and of the designs of a few; that ape of reason, who usurps her seat, exercises her power, and is obeyed by mankind in her stead. Men find it easy, and government makes it profitable, to concur in established systems of speculation and practice: and the whole turn of education prepares them to live upon credit all their lives. Much pains are taken; and time bestowed, to teach us what to think; but little or none of either, to instruct us how to think. The magazine of the memory is stored and stuffed betimes; but the conduct of the understanding is all along neglected, and the free exercise of it is, in ef-

fect, forbid in all places, and in terms in some.

There is a strange distrust of human reason in every human institution: this distrust is so apparent, that an habitual submission to some authority or other, is forming in us from our cradles; that principles of reasoning, and matters of fact, are inculcated in our tender minds, before we are able to express that reason, and that, when we are able to exercise it, we are either forbid, or frightened from doing so, even on things that are themselves the proper objects of reason, or that are delivered to us upon an authority whose sufficiency or insufficiency is so most evidently.

On many subjects, such as the general laws of natural religion, and the general rules of society and good policy, men of all countries and languages, who cultivate their reason, judge alike. The same premises have led them to the same conclusions, and so, following the same guide, they have trod in the same path: at least, the differences are small, easily reconciled, and such as could not of themselves, contradistinguish nation from nation, religion from religion, and sect from sect. How comes it then, that there are other points on which the most opposite opinions are entertained, and some of these with so much heat and fury, that the men on one side of the hedge will die for the affirmative, and the men on the other for the negative? “Toute opinion est assez forte pour se faire épouser au prix de la vie,” says *Montagne*, whom I often quote, as I do *Seneca*, rather for the
the

the smartness of expression, than the weight or newness of matter. Look narrowly into it, and you will find, that the points agreed on, and the points disputed, are not proportionable to the common sense and general reason of mankind. Nature and truth are the same every where, and reason shews them every where alike. But the accidental and other causes, which give rise and growth to opinions, both in speculation and practice, are of infinite variety; and where ever these opinions are once confirmed by custom, and propagated by education, various, inconsistent, contradictory as they are, they all pretend (and all their pretences are backed by pride, by passion, and by interest) to have reason, or revelation, or both, on their side; though neither reason nor revelation can be possibly on the side of more than one, and may be possibly on the side of none.

Thus it happens that the people of Tibet are Tartars and Idolaters, that they are Turks and Mahometans at Constantinople, Italians and Papists at Rome; and how much soever education may be less confined, and the means of knowledge more attainable in France and our own country, yet thus it happens in great measure that Frenchmen and Roman Catholics are bred at Paris, and Englishmen and Protestants at London. For men, indeed, properly speaking, are bred no where; every one thinks the system, as he speaks the language of his country, at least there are few that think, and none that act, in any country, according to the dictates of pure
un-

unbiaſſed reaſon; unleſs they may be ſaid to do ſo, when reaſon directs them to ſpeak and act according to the ſyſtem of their country or ſect, at the ſame time as ſhe leads them to think according to that of nature and truth.

Thus the far greateſt part of mankind appears reduced to a lower ſtate than other animals, in that very reſpect on account of which we claim ſo great ſuperiority over them; becauſe inſtinct, that has its due effect, is preferable to reaſon that has not. I ſuppoſe in this place, with philoſophers, and the vulgar, that which I am in no wiſe ready to affirm, that other animals have no ſhare of human reaſon: for, let me ſay by the way, it is much more likely other animals ſhould ſhare the human, which is denied, than that man ſhould ſhare the divine reaſon, which is affirmed. But, ſuppoſing our monopoly of reaſon, would not your Lordſhip chuſe to walk upon four legs, to wear a long tail, and to be called a beaſt, with the advantage of being determined by irrefiſtible and unerring inſtinct to thoſe truths that are neceſſary to your well-being; rather than to walk on two legs, to wear no tail, and to be honoured with the title of man, at the expence of deviating from them perpetually? Inſtinct acts ſpontaneouſly whenever its action is neceſſary, and directs the animal according to the purpoſe for which it was implanted in him. Reaſon is a nobler and more extenſive faculty; for it extends to the unneceſſary as well as neceſſary, and to ſatisfy our curioſity as well as our wants: but reaſon muſt be excited,

cited, or she will remain inactive; she must be left free, or she will conduct us wrong, and carry us farther astray from her own precincts than we should go without her help: in the first case, we have no sufficient guide; and in the second, the more we employ our reason, the more unreasonable we are.

Now, if all this be so, if reason has so little, and ignorance, passion, interest, and custom so much to do, in forming our opinions and our habits, and in directing the whole conduct of human life; is it not a thing desirable by every thinking man, to have the opportunity, indulged to so few by the course of accidents, the opportunity "*secum esse, et secum vivere*," of living some years at least to ourselves, and for ourselves, in a state of freedom, under the laws of reason, instead of passing our whole time in a state of vassalage under those of authority and custom? Is it not worth our while to contemplate ourselves, and others, and all the things of this world, once before we leave them, through the medium pure, and, if I may say so, of undefiled reason? Is it not worth our while to approve or condemn on our own authority, what we receive in the beginning of life on the authority of other men, who were not then better able to judge for us, than we are now to judge for ourselves?

That this may be done, and has been done to some degree, by men who remained much more mingled than I design to be for the future, in the company and business of the world, I shall
not

not deny ; but still it is better done in retreat, and with greater ease and pleasure. Whilst we remain in the world, we are all fettered down, more or less, to one common level, and have neither all the leisure, nor all the means and advantages, to soar above it, which we may procure to ourselves, by breaking these fetters, in retreat. To talk of abstracting ourselves from matter, laying aside body, and being resolved, as it were, into pure intellect, is proud, metaphysical, unmeaning jargon : but to abstract ourselves from the prejudices, and habits, and pleasures, and business of the world, is no more than many are, though all are not, capable of doing. They who can do this, may elevate their souls in retreat to an higher station, and may take from thence such a view of the world, as the second *Scipio* took in his dream, from the seats of the blessed, when the whole earth appeared so little to him, that he could scarce discern that speck of dirt, the Roman empire. Such a view as this will increase our knowledge, by shewing us our ignorance ; will distinguish every degree of probability from the lowest to the highest, and mark the distance between that and certainty ; will dispel the intoxicating fumes of philosophical presumption, and teach us to establish our peace of mind, where alone it can rest securely, in resignation ; in short, such a view will render life more agreeable, and death less terrible. Is not this business, my Lord ? Is not this pleasure too, the highest pleasure ? The world can afford us none such ; we must retire
from

from the world to taste it with a full gust; but we shall taste it the better for having been in the world. The share of sensual pleasures, that a man of my age can promise himself, is hardly worth attention: he should be sated, he will be soon disabled; and very little reflection surely will suffice, to make his habits of this kind lose their power over him, in proportion at least as his power of indulging them diminishes. Besides, your Lordship knows that my scheme of retirement excludes none of these pleasures that can be taken with decency and conveniency; and to say the truth, I believe that I allow myself more in speculation, than I shall find I want in practice. As to the habits of business, they can have no hold on one who has been so long tired with it. You may object, that though a man has discarded these habits, and has not even the embers of ambition about him to revive them, yet he cannot renounce all public business as absolutely as I seem to do; because a better principle, a principle of duty, may summon him to the service of his country. I will answer you with great sincerity. No man has higher notions of this duty than I have. I think that scarce any age or circumstances, can discharge us entirely from it; no, not my own. But as we are apt to take the impulse of our own passions, for a call to the performance of this duty; so when these passions impel us no longer, the call that puts us upon action must be real, and loud too. Add to this, that there are different methods, proportioned to different circumstances and situations,
of

of performing the same duty. In the midst of retreat, where ever it may be fixed, I may contribute to preserve and defend the British constitution of government: and you, my Lord, may depend upon me, that whenever I can, I will. Should any one ask you, in this case, from whom I expect my reward? Answer him by declaring to whom I pay this service; “*Dei immortalis, qui me non accipere modo hæc a majoribus voluit, sed etiam posteris proderet.*”

But, to lead the life I propose with satisfaction and profit, renouncing the pleasures and business of the world, and breaking the habits of both, is not sufficient: the supine creature whose understanding is superficially employed, through life, about a few general notions, and is never bent to a close and steady pursuit of truth, may renounce the pleasures and business of the world, for even in the business of the world we see such creatures often employed, and may break the habits; nay he may retire and drone away life in solitude, like a monk, or like him over the door of whose house, as if his house had been his tomb, somebody writ, “*Here lies such an one.*” But no such man will be able to make the true use of retirement. The employment of his mind, that would have been agreeable and easy if he had accustomed himself to it early, will be unpleasant and impracticable late: such men lose their intellectual powers for the want of exerting them, and, having trifled away youth, are reduced to the necessity of trifling away age. It fares with the
mind

mind just as it does with the body. He who was born with a texture of brain as strong as that of *Newton*, may become unable to perform the common rules of arithmetic : just as he who has the same elasticity in his muscles, the same suppleness in his joints, and all his nerves and sinews as well braced as *Jacob Hall*, may become a fat unwieldy sluggard. Yet farther, the implicit creature, who has thought it all his life needless, or unlawful, to examine the principles or facts that he took originally on trust, will be as little able as the other, to improve his solitude to any good purpose : unless we call it a good purpose, for that sometimes happens, to confirm and exalt his prejudices, so that he may live and die in one continued delirium. The confirmed prejudices of a thoughtful life are as hard to change as the confirmed habits of an indolent life : and as some must trifle away age because they have trifled away youth, others must labour on in a maze of error, because they have wandered there too long to find their way out.

There is a prejudice in China in favour of little feet, and therefore the feet of girls are swathed and bound up from the cradle, so that the women of that country are unable to walk without tottering and stumbling all their lives. Among the savages in America, there are some who hold flat heads and long ears in great esteem, and therefore press the one, and draw down the others so hard from their infancy, that they destroy irrecoverably the true proportions
of

of nature, and continue all their lives ridiculous to every sight but their own. Just so, the first of these characters cannot make any progress, and the second will not attempt to make any, in an impartial search after real knowledge.

To set about acquiring the habits of meditation and study late in life, is like getting into a go-cart with a grey-beard, and learning to walk when we have lost the use of our legs. In general the foundations of an happy old age must be laid in youth: and in particular, he who has not cultivated his reason young, will be utterly unable to improve it old. “*Manent ingenia
“ senibus modo permaneant studium et indu-
“ stria.*”

Not only a love of study, and a desire of knowledge, must have grown up with us, but such an industrious application likewise, as requires the whole vigour of the mind to be exerted in the pursuit of truth, through long trains of ideas, and all those dark recesses wherein man, not God, has hid it.

This love and this desire I have felt all my life, and I am not quite a stranger to this industry and application. There has been something always ready to whisper in my ear, whilst I ran the course of pleasure and of business,

“*Solve senescentem mature sanus equum.*”

But my Genius, unlike the demon of *Socrates*, whispered so softly, that very often I heard him not, in the hurry of those passions by which I was transported. Some calmer hours there

there were: in them I hearkened to him. Reflection had often its turn, and the love of study and the desire of knowledge have never quite abandoned me. I am not therefore entirely unprepared for the life I will lead; and it is not without reason that I promise myself more satisfaction in the latter part of it, than I ever knew in the former.

Your Lordship may think this perhaps a little too sanguine, for one who has lost so much time already: you may put me in mind, that human life has no second spring, no second summer: you may ask me, what I mean by sowing in autumn, and whether I hope to reap in winter? My answer will be, that I think very differently from most men, of the time we have to pass, and the business we have to do in this world. I think we have more of one, and less of the other, than is commonly supposed. Our want of time, and the shortness of human life, are some of the principal commonplace complaints which we prefer against the established order of things: they are the grumblings of the vulgar, and the pathetic lamentations of the philosopher; but they are impertinent and impious in both. The man of business despises the man of pleasure, for squandering his time away; the man of pleasure pities and laughs at the man of business, for the same thing: and yet both concur superciliously and absurdly to find fault with the Supreme Being, for having given them so little time. The philosopher, who mispends it very often as much

as the others, joins in the same cry, and authorises this impiety. *Theophrastus* thought it extremely hard to die at ninety, and to go out of the world when he had just learned how to live in it. His master *Aristotle* found fault with nature, for treating man in this respect worse than several other animals: both very unphilosophically! and I love *Seneca* the better for his quarrel with the Stagirite on this head. We see, in so many instances, a just proportion of things, according to their several relations to one another, that philosophy should lead us to conclude this proportion preserved, even where we cannot discern it; instead of leading us to conclude that it is not preserved where we do not discern it, or where we think that we see the contrary. To conclude otherwise, is shocking presumption. It is to presume that the system of the universe would have been more wisely contrived, if creatures of our low rank among intellectual natures had been called to the councils of the Most High; or that the Creator ought to mend his work by the advice of the creature. That life which seems to our self-love so short, when we compare it with the ideas we frame of eternity, or even with the duration of some other beings, will appear sufficient, upon a less partial view, to all the ends of our creation, and of a just proportion in the successive course of generations. The term itself is long: we render it short; and the want we complain of flows from our profusion, not from our poverty. We are all arrant spendthrifts: some of us dissipate our
estates

estates on the trifles, some on the superfluities, and then we all complain that we want the necessities of life. The much greatest part never reclaim, but die bankrupts to God and man. Others reclaim late; and they are apt to imagine, when they make up their accounts and see how their fund is diminished, that they have not enough remaining to live upon, because they have not the whole. But they deceive themselves: they were richer than they thought, and they are not yet poor. If they husband well the remainder, it will be found sufficient for all the necessities, and for some of the superfluities, and trifles too perhaps, of life: but then the former order of expence must be inverted; and the necessities of life must be provided, before they put themselves to any cost for the trifles or superfluities.

Let us leave the men of pleasure and of business, who are often candid enough to own that they throw away their time, and thereby to confess that they complain of the Supreme Being for no other reason than this, that he has not proportioned his bounty to their extravagance: let us consider the scholar, and the philosopher, who, far from owning that he throws any time away, reproves others for doing it; that solemn mortal, who abstains from the pleasures, and declines the business, of the world, that he may dedicate his whole time to the search of truth, and the improvement of knowledge. When such an one complains of the shortness of human life in general, or of his re-

maintaining share in particular; might not a man, more reasonable though less solemn, expostulate thus with him?

“ Your complaint is indeed consistent with
“ your practice; but you would not, possibly,
“ renew your complaint if you reviewed your
“ practice. Though reading makes a scholar;
“ yet every scholar is not a philosopher, nor
“ every philosopher a wise man. It cost you
“ twenty years to devour all the volumes on
“ one side of your library: you came out a
“ great critic in Latin and Greek, in the oriental
“ tongues, in history and chronology; but
“ you was not satisfied; you confessed that
“ these were the *literæ nihil sanantes*; and you
“ wanted more time to acquire other knowledge.
“ You have had this time: you have
“ passed twenty years more on the other side
“ of your library, among philosophers, rabbies,
“ commentators, schoolmen, and whole legions
“ of modern doctors. You are extremely well
“ versed in all that has been written concerning
“ the nature of God, and of the soul of
“ man; about matter and form, body and spirit;
“ and space, and eternal essences, and incorporeal
“ substances; and the rest of those profound
“ speculations. You are a master of
“ the controversies that have arisen about nature
“ and grace, about predestination and free-
“ will; and all the other abstruse questions that
“ have made so much noise in the schools, and
“ done so much hurt in the world. You are
“ going on, as fast as the infirmities you have
“ con-

“ contracted will permit, in the same course of
 “ study ; but you begin to foresee that you shall
 “ want time, and you make grievous complaints
 “ of the shortness of human life. Give me leave
 “ now to ask you, How many thousand years
 “ GOD must prolong your life, in order to re-
 “ concile you to his wisdom and goodness ? It
 “ is plain, at least highly probable, that a life as
 “ long as that of the most aged of the patriarchs
 “ would be too short to answer your purposes ;
 “ since the researches and disputes in which you
 “ are engaged, have been already for a much
 “ longer time the objects of learned inquiries,
 “ and remain still as imperfect and undetermi-
 “ ned as they were at first. But let me ask you
 “ again, and deceive neither yourself nor me ;
 “ Have you, in the course of these forty years,
 “ once examined the first principles, and the
 “ fundamental facts on which all those questions
 “ depend, with an absolute indifference of judg-
 “ ment, and with a scrupulous exactness ? with
 “ the same that you have employed in exami-
 “ ning the various consequences drawn from
 “ them, and the heterodox opinions about
 “ them ? Have you not taken them for grant-
 “ ed, in the whole course of your studies ? Or,
 “ if you have looked now and then on the state
 “ of the proofs brought to maintain them, have
 “ you not done it as a mathematician looks
 “ over a demonstration formerly made, to re-
 “ fresh his memory, not to satisfy any doubt ?
 “ if you have thus examined, it may appear
 “ marvellous to some, that you have spent so

“ much time in many parts of those studies,
“ which have reduced you to this hectic con-
“ dition of so much heat and weakness. But
“ if you have not thus examined, it must be
“ evident to all, nay, to yourself on the least
“ cool reflection, that you are still, notwith-
“ standing all your learning, in a state of igno-
“ rance. For knowledge can alone produce
“ knowledge: and without such an examina-
“ tion of axioms and facts, you can have none
“ about inferences.”

In this manner one might expostulate very reasonably with many a great scholar, many a profound philosopher, many a dogmatical casuist. And it serves to set the complaints about want of time, and the shortness of human life, in a very ridiculous but a true light. All men are taught their opinions, at least on the most important subjects, by rote; and are bred to defend them with obstinacy. They may be taught true opinions; but whether true or false, the same zeal for them, and the same attachment to them, is every where inspired alike. The Tartar believes as heartily that the soul of *Foe* inhabits in his *Dairo*, as the Christian believes the hypostatic union, or any article in the Anathasian creed. Now this may answer the ends of society in some respects, and do well enough for the vulgar of all ranks: but it is not enough for the man who cultivates his reason, who is able to think, and who ought to think, for himself. To such a man, every opinion that he has not himself either framed, or examined strictly, and then adopted, will

will pass for nothing more than what it really is, the opinion of other men; which may be true or false, for ought he knows. And this is a state of uncertainty, in which no such man can remain, with any peace of mind, concerning those things that are of greatest importance to us here, and may be so hereafter. He will make them, therefore, the objects of his first and greatest attention. If he has lost time, he will lose no more; and when he has acquired all the knowledge he is capable of acquiring on these subjects, he will be the less concerned whether he has time to acquire any farther. Should he have passed his life in the pleasures or business of the world; whenever he sets about this work, he will soon have the advantage over the learned philosopher. For he will soon have secured what is necessary to his happiness, and may sit down in the peaceful enjoyment of that knowledge; or proceed with greater advantage and satisfaction to the acquisition of new knowledge; whilst the other continues his search after things that are in their nature, to say the best of them, hypothetical, precarious, and superfluous.

But this is not the only rule, by observing of which we may redeem our time, and have the advantage over those who imagine they have so much in point of knowledge over your Lordship or me, for instance, and who despise our ignorance. The rule I mean is this; to be on our guard against the common arts of delusion, spoken of already; which, every one is ready to confess, have been employed to mislead those

who differ from him. Let us be diffident of ourselves, but let us be diffident of others too: our own passions may lead us to reason wrong; but the passions and interest of others may have the same effect. It is in every man's power, who sets about it in good earnest, to prevent the first; and when he has done so, he will have a conscious certainty of it. To prevent the last, there is one, and but one, sure method; and that is, to remount, in the survey of our opinions, to the first and even remotest principles on which they are founded. No respect, no habit, no seeming certainty whatever, must divert us from this: any affectation of diverting us from it ought to increase our suspicion; and the more important our examination is, the more important this method of conducting it becomes. Let us not be frightened from it, either by the supposed difficulty or length of such an inquiry; for, on the contrary, this is the easiest and the shortest, as well as the only sure, way of arriving at real knowledge; and of being able to place the opinions we examine in the different classes of true, probable, or false, according to the truth, probability, or falsehood of the principles from whence they are deduced. If we find these principles false, and that will be the case in many instances, we stop our inquiries on these heads at once, and save an immense deal of time that we should otherwise mispend. The Mussulman who enters on the examination of all the disputes that have arisen between the followers of *Omar* and *Ali*, and others doctors of his law, must

must acquire a thorough knowledge of the whole Mahometan system; and will have as good a right to complain of want of time, and the shortness of human life, as any Pagan or Christian divine or philosopher: but without all time or learning, he might have discovered that *Mahomet* was an impostor, and that the Koran is an heap of absurdities.

In short, my Lord, he who retires from the world, with a resolution of employing his leisure, in the first place, to re-examine and settle his opinions, is inexcusable if he does not begin with those that are most important to him, and if he does not deal honestly by himself. To deal honestly by himself, he must observe the rule I have insisted upon, and not suffer the delusions of the world to follow him into his retreat. Every man's reason is every man's oracle: this oracle is best consulted in the silence of retirement; and when we have so consulted, whatever the decision be, whether in favour of our prejudices or against them, we must rest satisfied: since nothing can be more certain than this, that he who follows that guide in the search of truth, as that was given him to lead him to it, will have a much better plea to make, whenever or wherever he may be called to account, than he who has resigned himself, either deliberately or inadvertently, to any authority upon earth.

When we have done this, concerning God, ourselves, and other men; concerning the relations in which we stand in to him, and to them;

them; the duties that result from these relations; and the positive will of the Supreme Being, whether revealed to us in a supernatural, or discovered by the right use of our reason in a natural way-----we have done the great business of our lives. Our lives are so sufficient for this, that they afford us time for more, even when we begin late; especially if we proceed in every other inquiry by the same rule. To discover error in axioms, or in first principles grounded on facts, is like the breaking of a charm. The enchanted castle, the steep rock, the burning lake, disappear; and the paths that lead to truth, which we imagined to be so long, so embarrassed, and so difficult, shew as they are, short, open, and easy. When we have secured the necessities, there may be time to amuse ourselves with the superfluities, and even with the trifles, of life. “Dulce est desipere,” said *Horace*: “Vive la bagatelle!” says *Swift*. I oppose neither; not the Epicurean, much less the Christian philosopher: but I insist that a principal part of these amusements be the amusements of study and reflection, of reading and conversation. You know what conversation I mean; for we lose the true advantage of our nature and constitution, if we suffer the mind to come, as it were, to a stand. When the body, instead of acquiring new vigour, and tasting new pleasures, begins to decline, and is sated with pleasures, or grown incapable of taking them, the mind may continue still to improve and indulge itself in new enjoyments. Every advance in
know-

knowledge opens a new scene of delight; and the joy that we feel in the actual possession of one, will be heightened by that which we expect to find in another: so that, before we can exhaust this fund of successive pleasures, death will come to end our pleasures and our pains at once. “In his studiis laboribusque viventi, non
 “intelligitur quando obrepit senectus: ita sen-
 “sim sine sensu ætas senescit, nec subito fran-
 “gitur, sed diuturnitate extinguitur.

This, my Lord, is the wisest and the most agreeable manner in which a man of sense can wind up the thread of life. Happy is he whose situation and circumstances gave him the opportunity and means of doing it! Though he should not have made any great advances in knowledge, and should set about it late, yet the task will not be found difficult, unless he has gone too far out of his way; and unless he continues too long to halt, between the dissipations of the world, and the leisure of a retired life:

—Vivendi recte qui prorogat horam,
 Rusticus expectat dum defluat amnis—

You know the rest. I am sensible, more sensible than any enemy I have, of my natural infirmities, and acquired disadvantages: but I have begun, and I will persist: for he who jogs forward on a battered horse, in the right way, may get to the end of his journey; which he cannot do, who gallops the fleetest courser of New-Market, out of it.

Adieu,

Adieu, my dear Lord. Though I have much more to say on this subject, yet I perceive, and I doubt you have long perceived, that I have said too much, at least for a letter, already. The rest shall be reserved for conversation whenever we meet: and then I hope to confirm, under your Lordship's eye, my speculations by my practice. In the mean time, let me refer you to our friend *Pope*. He says I made a philosopher of him: I am sure he has contributed very much, and I thank him for it, to the making an hermit of me.

R E F L E C.

R E F L E C T I O N S

U P O N

E X I L E *.

M DCC XVI.

ADVERTISEMENT. That the public may not be imposed upon by any lame and unequal translation, of the following treatise, from the French, in which language part of it has been lately printed, and retailed in a monthly Mercury; it is judged proper to add it here, at the end of this volume, from the author's original manuscript, as he himself had finished it for the press.

DISSIPATION of mind, and length of time, are the remedies to which the greatest part of mankind trust in their afflictions. But the first of these works a temporary, the second a slow, effect; and both are unworthy of a wise man. Are we to fly from ourselves that we may fly from our misfortunes, and fondly to imagine that the disease is cured because we find means to get some moments of respite from pain? Or shall we expect from time, the physician

* Several passages of this little treatise are taken from **SENECA**; and the whole is writ with some allusion to his style and manner, “*quanquam non omnino temere fit, quod de sententiis illius queritur Fabius,*” &c. **ERAS.** de sen. jud.

cian of brutes, a lingering and uncertain deliverance? Shall we wait to be happy till we can forget that we are miserable, and owe to the weakness of our faculties a tranquillity which ought to be the effect of their strength? Far otherwise. Let us set all our past and our present afflictions at once before our eyes *. Let us resolve to overcome them, instead of flying from them, or wearing out the sense of them by long and ignominious patience. Instead of palliating remedies, let us use the incision knife and the caustic, search the wound to the bottom, and work an immediate and radical cure.

The recalling of former misfortunes serves to fortify the mind against latter. He must blush to sink under the anguish of one wound, who surveys a body seamed over with the scars of many, and who has come victorious out of all the conflicts wherein he received them. Let sighs, and tears, and fainting under the lightest strokes of adverse fortune, be the portion of those unhappy people whose tender minds a long course of felicity has enervated; while such, as have passed through years of calamity, bear up, with a noble and immoveable constancy, against the heaviest. Uninterrupted misery has this good effect; as it continually torments, it finally hardens.

Such is the language of philosophy; and happy is the man who acquires the right of holding it. But this right is not to be acquired by
pathetic

* SEN. de Con. ad Hel.

pathetic discourse. Our conduct can alone give it us: and therefore, instead of presuming on our strength, the surest method is to confess our weakness, and, without loss of time, to apply ourselves to the study of wisdom. This was the advice which the oracle gave to Zeno *, and there is no other way of securing our tranquillity amidst all the accidents to which human life is exposed. Philosophy has, I know, her *Thra-sos*, as well as war: and among her sons many there have been, who, while they aimed at being more than men, became something less. The means of preventing this danger are easy and sure. It is a good rule, to examine well before we addict ourselves to any sect: but I think it is a better rule, to addict ourselves to none. Let us hear them all, with a perfect indifference on which side the truth lies: and, when we come to determine, let nothing appear so venerable to us as our own understandings. Let us gratefully accept the help of every one who has endeavoured to correct the vices, and strengthen the minds, of men; but let us chuse for ourselves, and yield universal assent to none. Thus, that I may instance the sect already mentioned, when we have laid aside the wonderful and surprising sentences, and all the paradoxes of the Portique, we shall find in that school such doctrines as our unprejudiced reason submits to with pleasure, as nature dictates, and as experience confirms. Without this precaution, we run the risque of becoming imaginary kings,
and

* DIOG. LAERT.

and real slaves. With it, we may learn to assert our native freedom, and live independent on fortune.

In order to which great end, it is necessary that we stand watchful, as centinels, to discover the secret wiles and open attacks of this capricious goddess, before they reach us *. Where she falls upon us unexpected, it is hard to resist; but those who wait for her, will repel her with ease. The sudden invasion of an enemy overthrows such as are not on their guard; but they who foresee the war, and prepare themselves for it before it breaks out, stand, without difficulty, the first and the fiercest onset. I learned this important lesson long ago, and never trusted to fortune even while she seemed to be at peace with me. The riches, the honours, the reputation, and all the advantages which her treacherous indulgence poured upon me, I placed so, that she might snatch them away without giving me any disturbance. I kept a great interval between me and them. She took them, but she could not tear them, from me. No man suffers by bad fortune, but he who has been deceived by good. If we grow fond of her gifts; fancy that they belong to us, and are perpetually to remain with us; if we lean upon them, and expect to be considered for them; we shall sink into all the bitterness of grief, as soon as these false and transitory benefits pass away, as soon as our vain and childish minds, unfraught with solid pleasures, become destitute

* SEN. de Con. ad Hel.

destitute even of those which are imaginary. But, if we do not suffer ourselves to be transported by prosperity, neither shall we be reduced by adversity. Our souls will be of proof against the dangers of both these states: and, having explored our strength, we shall be sure of it; for in the midst of felicity, we shall have tried how we can bear misfortune.

It is much harder to examine and judge, than to take up opinions on trust; and therefore the far greatest part of the world borrow from others, those which they entertain concerning all the affairs of life and death *. Hence it proceeds that men are so unanimously eager in the pursuit of things, which far from having any inherent real good, are varnished over with a specious and deceitful gloss, and contain nothing answerable to their appearances †. Hence it proceeds, on the other hand, that, in those things which are called evils, there is nothing so hard and terrible as the general cry of the world threatens. The word exile comes indeed harsh to the ear, and strikes us like a melancholy and execrable sound, through a certain persuasion which men have habitually concurred in. Thus the multitude has ordained. But the greatest part of their ordinances are abrogated by the wise.

Rejecting therefore the judgment of those
 Z who

* Dum unusquisque mavult credere, quam judicare, nunquam de vita judicatur, semper creditur. SEN. de vita Beat.

† SEN. de Con. ad Hel.

who determine according to popular opinions, or the first appearances of things, let us examine what exile really is *. It is, then, a change of place; and, lest you should say that I diminish the object, and conceal the most shocking parts of it, I add, that this change of place is frequently accompanied by some or all of the following inconveniences: by the loss of the estate which we enjoyed, and the rank which we held; by the loss of that consideration and power which we were in possession of; by a separation from our family and our friends; by the contempt which we may fall into; by the ignominy with which those who have driven us abroad will endeavour to sully the innocence of our characters, and to justify the injustice of their own conduct.

All these shall be spoken to hereafter. In the mean time, let us consider what evil there is in change of place, abstractedly and by itself.

To live deprived of one's country is intolerable †. Is it so? How comes it then to pass that such numbers of men live out of their countries by choice? Observe how the streets of London and of Paris are crowded. Call over those millions by name, and ask them one by one, of what country they are: how many will you find, who, from different parts of the earth, come to inhabit these great cities, which afford the largest opportunities, and the largest encouragement, to virtue and to vice? Some are

* SEN. de Con. ad. Hel.

† Ibid.

are drawn by ambition, and some are sent by duty; many resort thither to improve their fortunes; others bring their beauty, and others their eloquence, to market. Remove from hence, and go to the utmost extremities of the East or the West: visit the barbarous nations of Africa, or the inhospitable regions of the North: you will find no climate so bad, no country so savage, as not to have some people who come from abroad, and inhabit there by choice.

Among numberless extravagancies which have passed through the minds of men, we may justly reckon for one that notion of a secret affection, independent of our reason, and superior to our reason, which we are supposed to have for our country; as if there were some physical virtue in every spot of ground, which necessarily produced this effect in every one born upon it.

“—*Amor patriæ ratione valentior omni* *.”

As if the heimvei was an univereal distemper, inseparable from the constitution of an human body, and not peculiar to the Swiss, who seem to have been made for their mountains, as their mountains seem to have been made for them †. This notion may have contributed to the security and grandeur of states. It has therefore been not unartfully cultivated, and the prejudice of education has been with care put on its side. Men have come in this case, as in many, from believing that it ought to be so, to persuade others,

Z 2

* *Ov. de Ponto, El. iv.*

† *Card. BENTIV. Let.*

others, and even to believe themselves, that it is so. *Procopius* relates that *Abgarus* came to Rome, and gained the esteem and friendship of *Augustus* to such a degree, that this emperor could not resolve to let him return home: that *Abgarus* brought several beasts, which he had taken one day in hunting, alive to *Augustus*: that he placed in different parts of the Circus some of the earth which belonged to the places where each of these animals had been caught; that as soon as this was done, and they were turned loose, every one of them ran to that corner where his earth lay: that *Augustus*, admiring their sentiment of love to their country which nature has graved in the hearts of beasts, and struck by the evidence of the truth, granted the request which *Abgarus* immediately pressed upon him, and allowed, though with regret, the tetrach to return to Edessa. But this tale deserves just as much credit as that which follows in the same place, of the letter of *Abgarus* to *Jesus Christ*, of our Saviour's answer, and of the cure of *Abgarus*. There is nothing, surely, more groundless than the notion here advanced, nothing more absurd. We love the country in which we are born, because we receive particular benefits from it, and because we have particular obligations to it: which ties we may have to another country, as well as to that we are born in; to our country by election, as well as to our country by birth. In all other respects, a wise man looks on himself as a citizen of the world: and, when we ask him where his

his country lies, points, like *Anaxagoras*, with his finger to the heavens.

There are other persons, again, who have imagined, that as the whole universe suffers a continual rotation, and nature seems to delight in it, or to preserve herself by it; so there is in the minds of men a natural restlessness, which inclines them to change of place, and to the shifting their habitations *. This opinion has at least an appearance of truth, which the other wants; and is countenanced, as the other is contradicted, by experience. But, whatever the reasons be, which must have varied infinitely in an infinite number of cases and an immense space of time; true it is in fact, that the families and nations of the world have been in a continual fluctuation, roaming about on the face of the globe, driving and driven out by turns. What a number of colonies has Asia sent into Europe! The Phœnicians planted the coasts of the Mediterranean sea, and pushed their settlements even into the ocean. The Etrurians were of Asiatic extraction; and, to mention no more, the Romans, those lords of the world, acknowledged a Trojan exile for the founder of their empire. How many migrations have there been, in return to these, from Europe into Asia? They would be endless to enumerate; for, besides the Æolic, the Ionic, and others of almost equal fame, the Greeks, during several ages, made continual expeditions, and built cities in several parts of Asia.

Z 3

The

* SEN. de Con. ad Hel.

The Gauls penetrated thither too, and established a kingdom. The European Scythians overran these vast provinces, and carried their arms to the confines of Egypt. *Alexander* subdued all from the Hellespont to India, and built towns, and established colonies, to secure his conquests, and to eternise his name. From both these parts of the world Africa has received inhabitants and masters ; and what she has received she has given. The Tyrians built the city, and founded the republic, of Carthage ; the Greek has been the language of Egypt. In the remotest antiquity we hear of *Belus* in Chaldaea, and of *Sesostris* planting his tawny colonies in Colchos : and Spain has been, in these latter ages, under the dominion of the Moors. If we turn to Runic history, we find our fathers, the Goths, led by *Woden* and by *Thor*, their heroes first and their divinities afterwards, from the Asiatic Tartary into Europe : and who can assure us that this was their first migration ? They came into Asia perhaps by the east, from that continent to which their sons have lately sailed from Europe by the west : and thus in the process of three or four thousand years, the same race of men have pushed their conquests and their habitations round the globe ; at least this may be supposed, as reasonably as it is supposed, I think by *Grotius*, that America was peopled from Scandinavia. The world is a great wilderness, wherein mankind have wandered and jostled one another about from the creation. Some have removed by necessity, and others

others by choice. One nation has been fond of seizing what another was tired of possessing: and it will be difficult to point out the country which is to this day in the hands of its first inhabitants.

Thus fate has ordained that nothing shall remain long in the same state: and what are all these transportations of people, but so many public exiles? *Varro*, the most learned of the Romans, thought, since Nature * is the same wherever we go, that this single circumstance was sufficient to remove all objections to change of place, taken by itself, and stripped of the other inconveniencies which attend exile. *M. Brutus* thought it enough, that those who go into banishment cannot be hindered from carrying their virtue along with them. Now, if any one judge that each of these comforts is in itself insufficient, he must however confess that both of them joined together are able to remove the terrors of exile. For what trifles must all we leave behind us be esteemed, in comparison of the two most precious things which men can enjoy, and which, we are sure, will follow us wherever we turn our steps, the same Nature, and our proper Virtue †? Believe me, the providence of God has established such an order in the world, that of all which belongs to us the least valuable parts can alone fall under the will of others. Whatever is best, is safest; lies out of the reach of human power; can neither be given nor taken away. Such is

Z 4

this

* SEN. de Con. ad Hel.

† Ibid.

this great and beautiful work of nature, the world. Such is the mind of man which contemplates and admires the world whereof it makes the noblest part. These are unseparably ours; and as long as we remain in one, we shall enjoy the other. Let us march, therefore, intrepidly wherever we are led by the course of human accidents. Wherever they lead us, on what coast soever we are thrown by them, we shall not find ourselves absolutely strangers. We shall meet with men and women, creatures of the same figure, endowed with the same faculties, and born under the same laws of nature. We shall see the same virtues and vices, flowing from the same general principles, but varied in a thousand different and contrary modes, according to that infinite variety of laws and customs which is established for the same universal end, the preservation of society. We shall feel the same revolutions of seasons, and the same sun and moon * will guide the course of our year. The same azure vault, bespangled with stars, will be every where spread over our heads. There is no part of the world from whence we may not admire those planets which roll, like ours, in different orbits round the same central sun; from whence we may not dis-

† PLUT. Of banishment. He compares those who cannot live out of their own country, to the simple people who fancied that the moon of Athens was a finer moon than that of Corinth.

——labentem cœlo quæ ducitis annum.

VIRG. Georg.

discover an object still more stupendous, that army of fixed stars hung up in the immense space of the universe, innumerable suns whose beams enlighten and cherish the unknown worlds which roll around them: and whilst I am ravished by such contemplations as these, whilst my soul is thus raised up to heaven, it imports me little what ground I tread upon.

Brutus *, in the book which he writ on virtue, related that he had seen *Marcellus* in exile at Mitylene, living in all that happiness which human nature is capable of, and cultivating, with as much assiduity as ever, all kinds of laudable knowledge. He added that this spectacle made him think that it was rather he who went into banishment, since he was to return without the other, than the other who remained in it. O *Marcellus*, far more happy when *Brutus* approved thy exile, than when the commonwealth approved thy consulship! How great a man must thou have been to extort admiration from him who appeared an object of admiration even to his own *Cato*! The same *Brutus* reported further, that *Cæsar* overshot Mitylene, because he could not stand the sight of *Marcellus* reduced to a state so unworthy of him. His restoration was at length obtained by the public intercession of the whole senate, who were dejected with grief to such a degree, that they seemed all upon this occasion to have the same sentiments with *Brutus*, and to be suppliants for themselves, rather than for *Mar-*
cel-

* SEN. de Con. ad Hel.

cellus *. This was to return with honour ; but surely he remained abroad with greater, when *Brutus* could not resolve to leave him, nor *Cæsar* to see him ; for both of them bore witness of his merit. *Brutus* grieved, and *Cæsar* blushed, to go to Rome without him.

2. *Metellus Numidicus* had undergone the same fate some years before, while the people, who are always the surest instruments of their own servitude, were laying, under the conduct of *Marius*, the foundations of that tyranny which was perfected by *Cæsar*. *Metellus* alone, in the midst of an intimidated senate and outrageous multitude, refused to swear to the pernicious laws of the tribune *Saturninus*. His constancy became his crime, and exile his punishment. A wild and lawless faction prevailing against him ; the best men of the city armed in his defence, and were ready to lay down their lives that they might preserve so much virtue to their country. But he, having failed to persuade, thought it not lawful to constrain. He judged in the phrensy of the Roman commonwealth, as *Plato* judged in the dotage of the Athenian. *Metellus* knew, that if his fellow-citizens amended, he should be recalled ; and if they did not amend, he thought he could be no where worse than at Rome. He went
volun-

* MARCELLUS was assassinated at Athens, in his return home, by CHILO, an old friend and fellow-soldier of his. The motive of CHILO is not explained in history. CAESAR was suspected, but he seems to be justified by the opinion of BRUTUS.

voluntarily into exile, and wherever he passed, he carried the sure symptom of a sickly state, and the certain prognostic of an expiring commonwealth. What temper he continued in abroad will best appear by a fragment of one of his letters which *Gellius* *, in a pedantic compilation of phrases used by the annalist *Q. Claudius*, has preserved for the sake of the word *fruniscor*. “ Illi vero omni jure atque honestate “ interdicti: ego neque aqua neque igne careo: “ et summa gloria fruniscor,” Happy *Metellus*! happy in the conscience of thy own virtue! happy in thy pious son, and in that excellent friend who resembled thee in merit and in fortune!

Rutilius had defended Asia against the extortions of the publicans, according to the strict justice of which he made profession, and to the particular duty of his office. The equestrian order were upon this account his enemies, and the Marian faction was so of course, on account of his probity, as well as out of hatred to *Metellus*. The most innocent man of the city was accused of corruption. The best man was prosecuted by the worst, by *Apicius*; a name dedicated to infamy †. Those who had stirred up the false accusation sat as judges, and pronounced the unjust sentence against him. He hardly deigned to defend his cause, but retired into the

* Lib. xvii. cap. 2.

† There was another APICIUS, in the reign of TIBERIUS, famous for his gluttony; and a third in the time of TRAJAN.

the East, where that Roman virtue, which Rome could not bear, was received with honour *. Shall *Rutilius* now be deemed unhappy, when they who condemned him are, for that action, delivered down as criminals to all future generations? when he quitted his country with greater ease than he would suffer his exile to finish? when he alone durst refuse the dictator *Sylla*, and being recalled home, not only declined to go, but fled farther off?

What do you propose, it may be said, by these examples, multitudes of which are to be collected from the memorials of former ages? I propose to shew, that as change of place, simply considered, can render no man unhappy, so the other evils which are objected to exile, either cannot happen to wise and virtuous men; or, if they do happen to them, cannot render them miserable. Stones are hard, and cakes of ice are cold; and all who feel them, feel them alike †. But the good or the bad events, which fortune brings upon us, are felt according to what qualities we, not they, have. They are in themselves indifferent and common accidents, and they acquire strength by nothing but our vice or our weakness. Fortune can dispense neither felicity nor infelicity unless we co-operate with her. Few men, who are unhappy under the loss of an estate, would be happy in the possession of it: and those, who deserve to enjoy the advantages which exile takes away, will

* SEN. de Prov. cap. 3.
exile.

† PLUT. On

will not be unhappy when they are deprived of them.

It grieves me to make an exception to this rule; but *Tully* was one so remarkably, that the example can neither be concealed nor passed over. This great man, who had been the saviour of his country; who had feared, in the support of that cause, neither the insults of a desperate party, nor the daggers of assassins; when he came to suffer for the same cause, sunk under the weight. He dishonoured that banishment which indulgent providence meant to be the means of rendering his glory complete. Uncertain where he should go, or what he should do, fearful as a woman, and froward as a child, he lamented the loss of his rank, of his riches, and of his splendid popularity. His eloquence served only to paint his ignominy in stronger colours. He wept over the ruins of his fine house which *Clodius* had demolished: and his separation from *Terentia*, whom he repudiated not long afterwards, was perhaps an affliction to him at this time. Every thing becomes intolerable to the man who is once subdued by grief *. He regrets what he took no pleasure in enjoying; and, overloaded already, he shrinks at the weight of a feather. *Cicero's* behaviour, in short, was such, that his friends, as well as his enemies, believed him to have lost his senses †. *Cæsar* beheld, with a secret satisfaction, the

* Mitto cætera intolerabilia. Etenim fletu impediör. L. iii. ad Attic. ep. 10.

† Tam sæpe, et tam vehementer objurgas, et animo infirmo esse dicis. Ib.

the man, who had refused to be his lieutenant, weeping under the rod of *Clodius*. *Pompey* hoped to find some excuse for his own ingratitude in the contempt which the friend, whom he had abandoned, exposed himself to. Nay, *Atticus* judged him too meanly attached to his former fortune, and reproached him for it. *Atticus*, whose great talents were usury and trimming, who placed his principal merit in being rich, and who would have been noted with infamy at Athens for keeping well with all sides and venturing on none * ; even *Atticus* blushed for *Tully*, and the most plausible man alive assumed the style of *Cato*.

I have dwelt the longer on this instance, because, whilst it takes nothing from the truth which has been established, it teaches us another of great importance. Wise men are certainly superior to all the evils of exile. But, in a strict sense, he who has left any one passion in his soul unsubdued, will not deserve that appellation. It is not enough that we have studied all the duties of public and private life, that we are perfectly acquainted with them, and that we live up to them in the eye of the world: a passion that lies dormant in the heart, and has escaped our scrutiny, or which we have observed and indulged as venial, or which we have perhaps encouraged as a principle to excite and to aid our virtue, may one time or other destroy our tranquillity, and disgrace our whole character. When virtue has steeled the mind on every

* PLUT. Vit. Solon.

every side, we are invulnerable on every side: but *Achilles* was wounded in the heel. The least part, overlooked or neglected, may expose us to receive a mortal blow. Reason cannot obtain the absolute dominion of our souls by one victory. Vice has many reserves, which must be beaten; many strongholds which must be forced; and we may be found of proof in many trials, without being so in all. We may resist the severest, and yield to the weakest attacks of fortune. We may have got the better of avarice, the most epidemical disease of the mind, and yet be slaves to ambition *. We may have purged our souls of the fear of death, and yet some other fear may venture to lurk behind. This was the case of *Cicero*. Vanity was his cardinal vice †. It had, I question not, warmed his zeal, quickened his industry, animated the love of his country, and supported his constancy against *Catiline*: but it gave to *Clodius* an entire victory over him. He was not afraid to die

* *SENECA* says the contrary of all this, according to the stoical system, which, however, he departs from on many occasions. “ Si contra unam quamlibet partem fortunæ satis tibi roboris est, idem adversus omnes erit.—
“ Si avaritia dimisit, vehementissima generis humani pestis,
“ moram tibi ambitio non faciet. Si ultimum diem, &c.”
De Con. ad Hel.

Non singula vitia ratio, sed pariter omnia prostermit. In universum semel vincitur. Ibid.

Nec audacem quidem timoris absolvimus; ne prodigum quidem avaritia liberamus. De Benef. L. iv. c. 27.

Qui autem habet vitium unum, habet omnia. Ib. L. v. c. 15.

† In animo autem gloriæ cupido, qualis fuit Ciceronis, plurimum potest. Vel. Pat. L. i.

die, and part with estate, rank, honour, and every thing which he lamented the loss of; but he was afraid to live deprived of them: “ Ut
 “ vivus hæc amitterem *.” He would probably have met death on this occasion with the same firmness with which he said to *Popilius Lænus*, his client and his murderer, “ Ap-
 “ proach, veteran, and, if at least thou canst
 “ do this well, cut off my head.” But he could not bear to see himself, and to be seen by others, stripped of those trappings which he was accustomed to wear. This made him break out into so many shameful expressions. “ Possum oblivisci qui fuerim? non sentire
 “ qui sim? quo caream honore? qua glo-
 “ ria?” And speaking of his brother---“ Vita-
 “ vi ne viderem; ne aut illius luctum squalo-
 “ remque aspicerem, aut me, quem ille floren-
 “ tissimum reliquerat, perditum illi afflictum-
 “ que offerrem †.” He had thought of death, and prepared his mind for it. There were occasions too where his vanity might be flattered by it. But the same vanity hindered him in his prosperous estate from supposing such a reverse as afterwards happened to him. When it came, it found him unprepared, it surprised him, it stunned him; for he was still fond of the pomp and hurry of Rome, “ fumum, et
 “ opes, strepitumque Romæ;” and unweaned from all those things which habit renders necessary, and which nature has left indifferent.

We

* Ep. ad Attic. L. iii. ep. 3, 7, 10. et passim.

† L. iii. ep. 10. ad Attic.

We have enumerated them above, and it is time to descend into a more particular examination of them. Change of place then may be borne by every man. It is the delight of many. But who can bear the evils which accompany exile? You who ask the question can bear them. Every one who considers them as they are in themselves, instead of looking at them through the false optic which prejudice holds before our eyes. For what? you have lost your estate: reduce your desires, and you will perceive yourself to be as rich as ever, with this considerable advantage to boot, that your cares will be diminished. Our natural and real wants * are confined to narrow bounds, whilst those which fancy and custom create are confined to none. Truth lies within a little and certain compass, but error is immense. If we suffer our desires therefore to wander beyond these bounds, they wander eternally. “Nescio quid
“curtæ semper abest rei.” We become necessitous in the midst of plenty, and our poverty increases with our riches. Reduce your desires, be able to say with the apostle of Greece, to whom *Erasmus* was ready to address his prayers, “Quam multis ipse non egeo?” banish out of your exile all imaginary, and you
A a will

* Naturalia desideria finita sunt: ex falso opinione nascentia ubi definant non habent, nullus enim terminus falso est. SEN. Ep. 16.

Excerpt. ex Lib. SEN. falsely so called.

Si ad naturam vives, nunquam eris pauper; si ad opinionem, nunquam dives. Exiguum natura desiderat, opinio immensum. SEN. Ep. 16.

will suffer no real, wants. The little stream which is left will suffice to quench the thirst of nature: and that which cannot be quenched by it, is not your thirst, but your distemper; a distemper formed by the vicious habits of your mind, and not the effect of exile. How great a part of mankind bear poverty with cheerfulness, because they have been bred in it, and are accustomed to it? * Shall we not be able to acquire, by reason and by reflection, what the meanest artisan possesses by habit? Shall those who have so many advantages over him, be slaves to wants and necessities of which he is ignorant? The rich, whose wanton appetites neither the produce of one country, nor of one part of the world, can satisfy, for whom the whole habitable globe is ransacked, for whom the caravans of the east are continually in march, and the remotest seas are covered with ships; these pampered creatures, sated with superfluity, are often glad to inhabit an humble cot, and to make an homely meal. They run for refuge into the arms of frugality. Madmen that they are, to live always in fear of what they sometimes wish for, and to fly from that life which they find it luxury to imitate! Let us cast our eyes backwards on those great men who lived in the ages of virtue, of simplicity, of frugality, and let us blush to think that we enjoy in banishment more than they were masters of in the midst of their glory, in the utmost affluence of their fortune. Let us imagine that
we

* SEN. de Con. ad Hel.

we behold a great dictator giving audience to the Samnite ambassadors, and preparing on the hearth his mean repast with the same hand which had so often subdued the enemies of the commonwealth, and borne the triumphal laurel to the capitol. Let us remember that *Plato* had but * three servants, and that *Zeno* had none †. *Socrates*, the reformer of his country, was maintained, as *Menenius Agrippa*, the arbiter of his country, was buried, by a contribution §. While *Attilius Regulus* beat the Carthaginians in Afric, the flight of his ploughman reduced his family to distress at home, and the tillage of his little farm became the public care. *Scipio* died without leaving enough to marry his daughters, and their portions were

A a 2

paid

* *PLATO*'s will, in *DIOG. LAER.* mentions four servants besides *DIANA*, to whom he gave her freedom.

APULEIUS makes his estate consist in a little garden near the academy, two servants, a patten for sacrifices, and as much gold as would serve to make ear-rings for a child.

† *ZENO* was owner of a thousand talents when he came from Cyprus into Greece, and he used to lend his money out upon ships at an high interest. He kept, in short, a kind of insurance-office. He lost this estate, perhaps, when he said, “ recte sane agit fortuna, quæ nos ad philosophiam impellit.” Afterwards he received many and great presents from *ANTIGONUS*. So that his great frugality and simplicity of life, was the effect of his choice, and not of necessity. Vid. *DIO. LAER.*

§ *DIO. LAER. Vit. Soc.* quotes *ARISTOXENUS* for affirming that *SOCRATES* used to keep a box, and lived upon the money which was put into it: “ Posita igitur arcula, colligisse pecuniam quæ daretur; consumpta autem ea, rursus posuisse.”

paid out of the treasury of the state; for sure it was just that the people of Rome should once pay tribute to him, who had established a perpetual tribute on Carthage. After such examples, shall we be afraid of poverty? shall we disdain to be adopted into a family which has so many illustrious ancestors? Shall we complain of banishment for taking from us what the greatest philosophers and the greatest heroes of antiquity never enjoyed?

You will find fault perhaps, and attribute to artifice, that I consider singly misfortunes which come altogether on the banished man, and overbear him with their united weight. You could support change of place, if it was not accompanied with poverty; or poverty, if it was not accompanied with the separation from your family and your friends, with the loss of your rank, consideration, and power, with contempt and ignominy. Whoever he be who reasons in this manner, let him take the following answer. The least of these circumstances is singly sufficient to render the man miserable who is not prepared for it, who has not divested himself of that passion upon which it is directed to work. But he who has got the mastery of all his passions, who has foreseen all these accidents, and prepared his mind to endure them all, will be superior to all of them, and to all of them at once as well as singly. He will not bear the loss of his rank, because he can bear the loss of his estate: but he will bear both, because he is prepared for both; because he is free from pride,
as

as much as he is from avarice.

You are separated from your family and your friends. Take the list of them, and look it well over. How few of your family will you find who deserve the name of friends? and how few among these who are really such? Erase the names of such as ought not to stand on the roll, and the voluminous catalogue will soon dwindle into a narrow compass. Regret, if you please, your separation from this small remnant. Far be it from me, whilst I declaim against a shameful and vicious weakness of mind, to prescribe the sentiments of a virtuous friendship. Regret your separation from your friends: but regret it like a man who deserves to be theirs. This is strength, not weakness of mind; it is virtue, not vice.

But the least uneasiness under the loss of the rank which we held, is ignominious. There is no valuable rank among men, but that which real merit assigns. The princes of the earth may give names, and institute ceremonies, and exact the observation of them; their imbecillity and their wickedness may prompt them to clothe fools and knaves with robes of honour, and emblems of wisdom and virtue: but no man will be in truth superior to another, without superior merit; and that rank can no more be taken from us, than the merit which establishes it. The supreme authority gives a fictitious and arbitrary value to coin, which is therefore not current alike in all times and in all places: but the real value remains invariable; and the pro-

vident man, who gets rid as fast as he can of the drossy piece, hoards up the good silver. Thus merit will not procure the same consideration universally. But what then? the title to this consideration is the same, and will be found alike in every circumstance by those who are wise and virtuous themselves. If it is not owned by such as are otherwise, nothing is however taken from us; we have no reason to complain. They considered us for a rank which we had; for our denomination, not for our intrinsic value. We have that rank, that denomination no longer, and they consider us no longer: they admired in us what we admired not in ourselves. If they learn to neglect us, let us learn to pity them. Their assiduity was importunate: let us not complain of the ease which this change procures us; let us rather apprehend the return of that rank and that power, which, like a sunny day, would bring back these little insects, and make them swarm once more about us. I know how apt we are, under specious pretences, to disguise our weaknesses and our vices, and how often we succeed not only in deceiving the world, but even in deceiving ourselves. An inclination to do good is inseparable from a virtuous mind; and therefore the man, who cannot bear with patience the loss of that rank and power which he enjoyed, may be willing to attribute his regrets to the impossibility which he supposes himself reduced to of satisfying this inclination. But let such an one know, that a wise man contents himself with doing as much good as his situation allows him

him to do ; that there is no situation wherein we may not do a great deal ; and that when we are deprived of greater power to do more good, we escape at the same time the temptation of doing some evil *.

The inconveniencies, which we have mentioned, carry nothing along with them difficult to be borne by a wise and virtuous man ; and those which remain to be mentioned, contempt and ignominy, can never fall to his lot. It is impossible that he who reverences himself should be despised by others ; and how can ignominy affect the man who collects all his strength within himself, who appeals from the judgment of the multitude to another tribunal, and lives independent of mankind and of the accidents of life ? *Cato* lost the election of prætor, and that of consul ; but is any one blind enough to truth to imagine, that these repulses reflected any disgrace on him ? The dignity of those two magistracies would have been increased by his wearing them. They suffered ; not *Cato*.

You have fulfilled all the duties of a good citizen, you have been true to your trust, constant in your engagements, and have pursued the interest of your country without regard to the enemies you created, and the dangers you run. You severed her interest as much as lay in your power, from those of her factions, and from those of her neighbours and allies too, when they became different. She reaps the benefit of these services, and you suffer for them.

A a 4

You

* SEN. de Con. ad Hel.

You are banished, and pursued with ignominy; and those whom you hindered from triumphing at her expence, revenge themselves at yours. The persons, in opposition to whom you served, or even saved, the public, conspire and accomplish your private ruin. These are your accusers, and the giddy ungrateful crowd your judges. Your name is hung up in the tables of proscription; and art, joined to malice, endeavours to make your best actions pass for crimes, and to stain your character. For this purpose the sacred voice of the senate is made to pronounce a lie, and those records, which ought to be the eternal monuments of truth, become the vouchers of imposture and calumny. Such circumstances as these you think intolerable, and you would prefer death to so ignominious an exile. Deceive not yourself. The ignominy remains with them who persecute unjustly, not with him who suffers unjust persecution. “Recalcitrat undique tutus.” Suppose that in the act which banishes you, it was declared that you have some contagious distemper, that you are crooked, or otherwise deformed. This would render the legislators ridiculous*. The other renders them infamous. But neither one nor the other can affect the man, who in an healthful well-proportioned body enjoys a conscience void of all the offences ascribed to him. Instead of such an exile, would you compound, that you might live at home in ease and plenty, to be

* The dialogue between CICERO and PHILISCUS. DION. CAS. Lib. xxxviii.

be the instrument of blending these contrary interests once more together, and of giving but the third place to that of your country? Would you prostitute her power to the ambition of others, under the pretence of securing her from imaginary dangers; and drain her riches into the pockets of the meanest and vilest of her citizens, under the pretence of paying her debts? If you could submit to so infamous a composition, you are not the man to whom I address my discourse, or with whom I will have any commerce: and if you have virtue enough to disdain it, why should you repine at the other alternative? Banishment from such a country, and with such circumstances, is like being delivered from prison. *Diogenes* was driven out of the kingdom of Pontus for counterfeiting the coin, and *Stratonicus* thought that forgery might be committed in order to get banished from *Scriphos*. But you have obtained your liberty by doing your duty.

Banishment, with all its train of evils, is so far from being the cause of contempt, that he who bears up with an undaunted spirit against them, while so many are dejected by them, erects on his very misfortunes a trophy to his honour: for such is the frame and temper of our minds, that nothing strikes us with greater admiration than a man intrepid in the midst of misfortunes. Of all ignominies, an ignominious death must be allowed to be the greatest; and yet, where is the blasphemer who will presume to defame the death of *Socrates**? This faint
entered

* SEN. de Con. ad Hel.

entered the prison with the same countenance with which he reduced thirty tyrants, and he took off ignominy from the place; for how could it be deemed a prison when *Socrates* was there? *Phocion* was led to execution in the same city; all those who met the sad procession cast their eyes to the ground, and with throbbing hearts bewailed, not the innocent man, but justice herself, who was in him condemned. Yet there was a wretch found, for monsters are sometimes produced in contradiction to the ordinary rules of nature, who spit in his face as he passed along. *Phocion* wiped his cheek; smiled; turned to the magistrate; and said, “Admonish
“ this man not to be so nasty for the future.”

Ignominy then can take no hold on Virtue*; for Virtue is in every condition the same, and challenges the same respect. We applaud the world when she prospers; and when she falls into adversity, we applaud her. Like the temples of the gods, she is venerable even in her ruins. After this, must it not appear a degree of madness to defer one moment acquiring the only arms capable of defending us against attacks which at every moment we are exposed to? Our being miserable, or not miserable, when we fall into misfortunes, depends on the manner in which we have enjoyed prosperity. If we have applied ourselves betimes to the study of wisdom and to the practice of virtue, these evils become indifferent; but if we have neglected to do so, they become necessary. In one case
they

* SEN. de Con. ad Hæl.

they are evil, in the other they are remedies for greater evils than themselves. *Zeno* * rejoiced that a shipwreck had thrown him on the Athenian coast: and he owed to the loss of his fortune the acquisition which he made of virtue, of wisdom, of immortality. There are good and bad airs for the mind, as well as for the body. Prosperity often irritates our chronical distempers, and leaves no hopes of finding any specific but in adversity. In such cases, banishment is like change of air, and the evils we suffer are like rough medicines applied to inveterate diseases. What † *Anacharsis* said of the vine, may aptly enough be said of prosperity. She bears the three grapes of drunkenness, of pleasure, and of sorrow, and happy it is if the last can cure the mischief which the former work. When afflictions fail to have their due effect, the case is desperate. They are the last remedy which indulgent Providence uses; and if they fail, we must languish and die in misery and contempt. Vain men! how seldom do we know what to wish or to pray for? When we pray against misfortunes, and when we fear them most, we want them most. It was for this reason that *Pythagoras* forbid his disciples to ask any thing in particular of God. The shortest and the best prayer which we can address to him who knows our wants, and our ignorance in asking, is this: "Thy will be done."

Tully says, in some part of his works, that as happiness is the object of all philosophy, so the
disputes

* DIO. LAER.

† SEN.

disputes among philosophers arise from their different notions of the sovereign good. Reconcile them in that point, you reconcile them in the rest. The school of *Zeno* placed this sovereign good in naked virtue, and wound the principle up to an extreme beyond the pitch of nature and truth. A spirit of opposition to another doctrine, which grew into great vogue while *Zeno* flourished, might occasion this excess. *Epicurus* placed the sovereign good in pleasure. His terms were wilfully or accidentally mistaken. His scholars might help to prevent his doctrine, but rivalry inflamed the dispute; for in truth there is not so much difference between stoicism reduced to reasonable intelligible terms, and genuine orthodox epicurism, as is imagined. The *felicis animi immota tranquillitas*, and the *voluptas* of the latter, are near enough a-kin: and I much doubt whether the firmest hero of the Portique would have borne a fit of the stone, on the principle of *Zeno*, with greater magnanimity and patience than *Epicurus* did, on those of his own philosophy *. However, *Aristotle* took a middle way, or explained himself better, and placed happiness in the joint advantages of the mind, of the body, and of fortune. They are reasonably joined; but certain it is, that they must not be placed on an equal foot. We can much better bear the privation of the last, than
of

* Compare the representations made so frequently of the doctrine of volupty taught by *EPICURUS*, with the account which he himself gives in his letter to *MENOECIUS*, of the sense wherein he understood this word. Vid. *DIOG. LAER.*

of the others ; and poverty itself, which mankind is so afraid of, “ per mare pauperiem fugiens, per saxa, per ignes,” is surely preferable to madness, or the stone, though * *Chrysippus* thought it better to live mad, than not to live! If banishment, therefore, by taking from us the advantages of fortune cannot take from us the more valuable advantages of the mind and body, when we have them ; and if the same accident is able to restore them to us, when we have lost them ; banishment is a very slight misfortune to those who are already under the dominion of reason, and a very great blessing to those who are still plunged in vices which ruin the health both of body and mind. It is to be wished for, in favour of such as these, and to be feared by none. If we are in this case, let us second the designs of Providence in our favour, and make some amends for neglecting former opportunities by not letting slip the last. “ Si nolis sanus, cures hydropicus.” We may shorten the evils which we might have prevented ; and as we get the better of our disorderly passions, and vicious habits, we shall feel our anxiety diminish in proportion. All the approaches to virtue are comfortable. With how much joy will the man, who improves his misfortunes in this manner, discover that those evils which he attributed to his exile, sprung from his vanity and folly, and vanish with them! He will see, that, in his former temper of mind, he resembled

† In his third book of *Nature*, cited by *PLUTARCH*, in the treatise on the contradictions of the Stoics.

resembled the effeminate prince who could drink no * water but that of the river Choaspes; or the simple queen, in one of the tragedies of *Euripedes*, who complained bitterly that she had not lighted the nuptial torch, and that the river Ismenus had not furnished the water at her son's wedding. Seeing his former state in this ridiculous light, he will labour on with pleasure towards another as contrary as possible to it; and when he arrives there, he will be convinced by the strongest of all proofs, his own experience, that he was unfortunate because he was vicious, not because he was banished.

If I was not afraid of being thought to refine too much, I would venture to put some advantages of fortune, which are due to exile, into the scale against those which we lose by exile. One there is which has been neglected even by great and wise men. *Demetrius Phalereus*, after his expulsion from Athens, became first minister to the king of *Egypt*; and *Themistocles* found such a reception at the court of Persia, that he used to say his fortune had been lost if he had not been ruined. But *Demetrius* exposed himself, by his favour under the first *Ptolemy*, to a new disgrace under the second: and *Themistocles*, who had been the captain of a free people, became the vassal of the prince he had conquered. How much better is it to take hold of the proper advantage of exile, and to live for ourselves, when we are under no obligation of living for others? *Similis*, a captain of great reputation
under

* PLUT. On banishment.

under *Trajan* and *Adrian*, having obtained leave to retire, passed seven years in his retreat; and then dying, ordered this inscription to be put on his tomb: That he had been many years on earth, but that he had lived only seven *. If you are wise, your leisure will be worthily employed, and your retreat will add new lustre to your character. Imitate *Thucydides* in *Thracia*, or *Xenophon* in his little farm at *Scillus*. In such a retreat you may sit down, like one of the inhabitants of *Elis*, who judged of the Olympic games, without taking any part in them. Far from the hurry of the world, and almost an unconcerned spectator of what passes in it, having paid in a public life what you owed to the present age, pay in a private life what you owe to posterity. Write, as you live, without passion; and build your reputation, as you build your happiness, on the foundations of truth. If you want the talents, the inclination, or the necessary materials for such a work, fall not however into sloth. Endeavour to copy after the example of *Scipio* at *Linternum*. Be able to say to yourself,

“Innocuas amo delicias doctamque quietem.”

Rural amusements, and philosophical meditations, will make your hours glide smoothly on; and if the indulgence of Heaven has given you a friend like *Lælius*, nothing is wanting to make you completely happy.

These are some of those reflections which
may

* XIPHIL.

may serve to fortify the mind under banishment, and under other misfortunes of life, which it is every man's interest to prepare for, because they are common to all men *: I say, they are common to all men ; because they who even escape them are equally exposed to them. The darts of adverse fortune are always levelled at our heads. Some reach us, some graze against us, and fly to wound our neighbours. Let us therefore impose an equal temper on our minds, and pay without murmuring the tribute which we owe to humanity. The winter brings cold, and we must freeze. The summer returns with heat, and we must melt. The inclemency of the air disorders our health, and we must be sick. Here we are exposed to wild beasts, there to men more savage than the beasts ; and if we escape the inconveniencies of the air and earth, there are perils by water and perils by fire. This established course of things it is not in our power to change : but it is in our power to assume such a greatness of mind as becomes wise and virtuous men ; as may enable us to encounter the accidents of life with fortitude, and to conform ourselves to the order of nature, who governs her great kingdom, the world, by continual mutations. Let us submit to this order ; let us be persuaded that whatever does happen ought to happen, and never be so foolish as to expostulate with nature. The best resolution we can take is to suffer what we cannot alter ; and to pursue, without repining, the road
which

* SEN. Ep. 107.

which Providence, who directs every thing, has marked out to us : for it is not enough to follow ; and he is but a bad soldier who fights, and marches on with reluctance. We must receive the orders with spirit and cheerfulness ; and not endeavour to flink out of the post which is assigned to us in this beautiful disposition of things, whereof even our sufferings make a necessary part. Let us address ourselves to God, who governs all, as *Cleanthes* did in those admirable verses, which are going to lose part of their grace and energy in my translation of them :

Parent of nature ! Master of the world !
 Where'er thy Providence directs, behold
 My steps with cheerful resignation turn.
 Fate leads the willing, drags the backward on.
 Why should I grieve, when grieving I must bear ?
 Or take with guilt, what guiltless I might share ?

Thus let us speak, and thus let us act. Refignation to the will of God is true magnanimity. But the sure mark of a pusillanimous and base spirit, is to struggle against, to censure the order of Providence, and, instead of mending our own conduct, to set up for correcting that of our Maker.

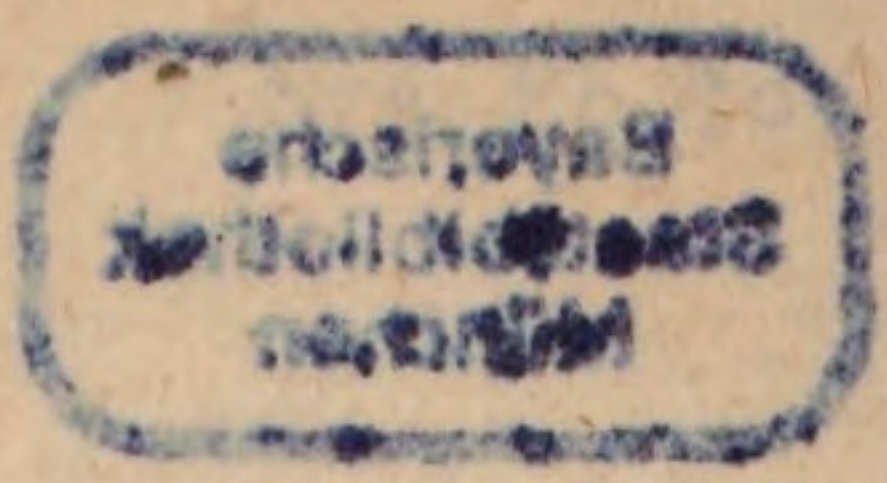
F I N I S.

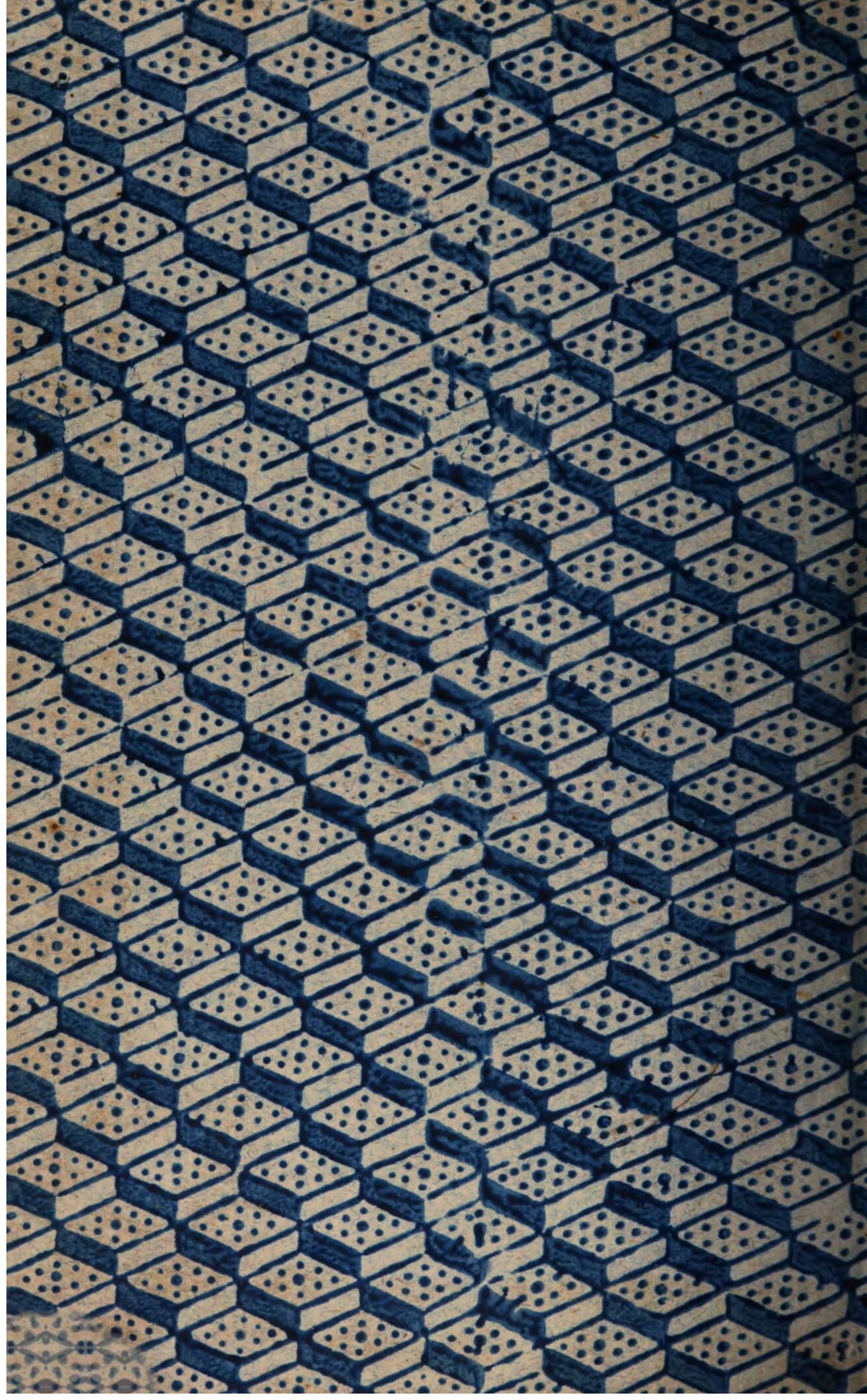


UPON EXILE
 which Providence, who directs every thing, has
 marked out for us: for it is not enough to fol-
 low; and he is but a bad soldier who fights, and
 marches on with reluctance. We must receive
 the orders with spirit and cheerfulness; and not
 endeavour to shake out of the path which is as-
 signed to us in this beautiful disposition of
 things, what we even our sufferings make a ne-
 cessary part. Let us address ourselves to God,
 who governs all, as Alexander did in those ad-
 mirable verses, which are going to his part
 of their grace and energy in any translation of
 them:

Thou of nature! Master of the world!
 Where'er thy Providence directs, behold
 My steps with cheerful resignation turn
 Thou leads the willing, drag the backward on
 Why should I grieve, when grieving I must learn?
 Or take with guilt, what guiltless I might share?

Thus let us speak, and thus let us act. Reli-
 gion to the will of God is true magnanimity.
 But the true mark of a pusillanimous and base
 spirit, is to struggle against, to censure the or-
 der of Providence, and instead of mending our
 own conduct, to set up for correcting that of
 our Maker.







Bolingbroke, Henry St. John,

Letters on the study and use of history

Edinburgh 1777

Bibl.Mont. 992

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10714283-6